

冒险的
哈克贝里*费恩

马克吐温

如何使用这个 TANTOR书

搜索：只需点击一章中的名称表的内容和
你会被带到该章的第一页。 你不需要按
章节的顺序，你可以去任何章在任何时候..

回：只需点击一章的标题，在开始任何章节
，它会回报你的表的内容。

按这里去
第九章

Contents

2

vengeance! Anne laughed—and then sighed. The bloom had been brushed from one little maiden dream. Would the painful process go on until everything became prosaic and hum-drum?

Chapter IX
An Unwelcome Lover and a Welcome Friend

The second term at Redmond sped as quickly as had the first—"actually whizzed away," Philippa said. Anne enjoyed it thoroughly in all its phases—the stimulating class rivalry, the making and deepening of new and helpful friendships, the gay little social stunts, the doings of the various societies of which she was a member, the widening of horizons and interests. She studied hard, for she had made up her mind to win the Thorburn Scholarship in English. This being won, meant that she could come back to Redmond the next year without trenching on Marilla's small savings—something Anne was determined she would not do.

Gilbert, too, was in full chase after a scholarship, but found plenty of time for frequent calls at Thirty-eight, St. John's. He was Anne's escort at nearly all the college affairs, and she knew that their names were coupled in Redmond gossip. Anne raged over this but was helpless; she could not cast an old friend like Gilbert aside, especially when he had grown suddenly wise and wary, as behooved him in the dangerous proximity of more than one Redmond youth who would gladly have taken his place by the side of the slender, red-haired coed, whose gray eyes were as alluring as stars of evening. Anne was never attended by the crowd of willing victims who hovered around Philippa's conquering march through her Freshman year; but there was a lanky, brainy Freshie, a jolly, little, round Sophomore, and a tall, learned Junior who all liked to call at Thirty-eight, St. John's, and talk over 'ologies and 'isms, as well as lighter subjects, with Anne, in the becushioned parlor of that domicile. Gilbert did not love any of them, and he was exceedingly careful to give none of them the advantage over him by any untimely display of his real feelings Anne-ward. To her he had become again the boy-comrade of Avonlea days, and as such could hold his own against any smitten swain who had

53

点击这里返回
的表的内容

印章：如果你希望有一个打印的网页在你面前的
边听到你的声读物，你可以打印一页，一个章节或任何
选择你的愿望通过选择页(s)你想打印，然后要
Adobe读者的文件的菜单选择"打印"。

内容

第一章

场景：密西西比河谷时间：四十至五十年前

你不知道我没有你有读一本书的
名称汤姆*索亚历险记；但这是不是没有问题。 是
的书先生作了马克*吐温，和他说了实话，为主。 有
的是事情，他伸，而主要是告诉他事实真相。 那是
什么。 我从来没有看到任何人但是骗了一次或另一种，没有它
是波莉姨妈或寡妇，或者也许玛丽。 波莉姨妈—你的姨妈
波莉，她是—玛丽和道格拉斯寡妇是告诉所有关于在这
本书，其中主要是一个真实的书，有一些担架，正如我之前所说的。

现在的方式，这本书上是这样的：汤姆和我找到了
钱，劫匪的藏在山洞里，它使我们丰富。 我们有六
万美元的美元所有的黄金。 这是一个可怕的景象钱的时候，
它被堆积起来。 好吧，撒切尔法官，他把它并把它放在利益，
它取出我们一美元一天的每人全年—超过一个
机构能够告诉什么做。 道格拉斯寡妇，她拿了我给她
的儿子，并允许她会sivilize我，但它是粗糙的，生活在
房子里所有的时间，考虑如何令人沮丧的经常和体面的寡妇
是在她所有的方法；以及所以当我无法忍受它不再是我点燃的。 我
得到了我的老破布和我的糖-大桶再次，是免费和
满意。 但是汤姆他追杀我，说他要去
开始一段的强盗，我可能会加入我是否会回去的遗孀
和受人尊敬。 所以我就回去了。

寡妇，她哭了我，称我为一个可怜迷失的羔羊，
她叫我有很多其他名称也一样，但她从来没有恶意通过
它。 她把我放在他们新衣服了，我不能做什么，但是
出汗和汗水，并且感受到所有拥挤。 好吧，那么，老东西
开始了。 寡妇响钟吃晚饭，你得
过来到时间。 当你到了桌你不能去吃饭，
但是，你不得不等待寡妇哄下她的头，并抱怨的一个
小小的送吃的，虽然有心眼真的什么事
他们，—那就是，没什么只有一切都很熟由本身。 在一个

桶的赔率和结束这是不同的；事情变得混在一起，和果汁的那种全部门办法，事情就更好。

晚饭后她得到了她的书，并了解到我关于穆萨和的Bulrushers，我一身汗，以找出关于他的一切，但通过和通过她让出来，摩西已经死了相当长的时间；这样然后我不在乎没有更多关于他，因为我不要采取没有股票在死去的人。

很快我就想抽烟，并要求寡妇以让我来。 但她不会的。 她说这是意味着实践而不是干净的，我必须试着不要做任何的更多。 那就是与某些人。他们得到了一件事情的时候他们什么都不知道关于它。 在这里，她是一个困扰有关摩西，这是没有亲属给她，没有用的任何人，走了，你看，又找到一个电源故障我做的事情，有一些良好。 她把鼻烟，也；当然，这是所有的权利，因为她做自己。

她的妹妹,沃特森小姐，一个可容忍的苗条的老女仆，用护目镜，刚刚来生活有了她，并采取了一套在我现在有了一个拼写的书。 她曾我中等硬了大约一个小时，然后该寡妇，让她轻松起来。 我不能站在这多长时间。 然后一小时是致命的沉闷，我坐立不安。 沃特森小姐会说，"别把你的脚在那里，哈克"和"不堆砌起来就像那个，哈克贝利—建立直；"很快她会说，"别差距和伸那样，越橘—为什么你不试着表现？" 然后她告诉了我所有的不好的地方，我说我希望我是在那里。 她得到了疯狂，但我不是有意不伤害。 所有我想要的只是去一个地方；所有我想要的是一个变化，我警告不特别。她说这是邪恶的说什么我说说她不会说这对整个世界，她会生活以去好地方。 嗯，我看不出没有任何优势在去她要去哪里，所以我做了我的心我不会尝试。 但我从来没有这么说，因为它只会惹麻烦，不会做没有好处。

现在她已经有了一个开始，她就告诉我所有关于良好的地方。 她说，所有机构必须做的是去周围全天候有一个竖琴和歌，直到永永远远。 所以我没有想太多。 但我从来没有这么说。 我问她，如果她觉得汤姆

会去那里和她说不过一个相当大的视线。 我很高兴
，因为我想他和我在一起。

沃特森小姐她保持啄我的，它得到了令人厌烦和
寂寞。 和他们牵强的黑鬼和有祈祷，
然后每个人都去睡觉。 我走到我的房间有一块
蜡烛，并把它放在桌子上。 然后我设置了一个主席通过该窗口
，并试图考虑的事情开朗，但是它警告没有使用。 我感到如此
寂寞我最希望我已经死了。 星闪闪发光，并
树叶沙沙作响在树林里曾经很悲哀的，我听到一只猫头鹰酒店
关闭，谁-whooing关于某人已经死了，和whippowill和
一只狗哭了关于某人就要死；和风
想要耳语的东西给我，我看不出来它是什么，
所以它制冷不寒而栗运行了我。 然后在树林里
我听到那种声音，一个幽灵使当它想要告诉
有关的东西这是对其心态并不能使自身理解，并且
因此不能休息容易在其严重，并且已经去那样每天晚上
悲伤。 我得到了以下心和害怕我也希望我有一些
公司。 很快，一个蜘蛛去爬上我的肩,我
翻转它，它点燃的蜡烛；以及之前，我可以让步，这是所有
瘪了。 我不需要任何人告诉我，这是一个可怕的糟糕的
迹象，并将给我拿一些运气不好，所以我很害怕和最震撼
的衣服脱掉我的。 我站起来，转过身在我的轨道三次
和越过我的乳房的每一个时间；然后我绑起来一点锁定我的
头发一个线程，以保持巫婆走。 但我没有没有信心。 你
做那个的时候你已经失去了一个马蹄铁，你已经发现，而不是
钉起来了门,但我没有听说过有人说它是
以任何方式保持关闭运气不好的时候你会杀了一个蜘蛛。

我设置了再次，一个震动，并得到了我的管对于一个
烟雾；为房屋所有仍然死亡，现在，所以寡妇
不知道。 嗯，很长一段时间后我听到时钟酒店关闭的
城镇去吊臂吊臂吊臂十二舔；以及所有仍然再次—斯蒂勒
比以往任何时候。 很快我听到一个树枝管理单元下，在黑暗之中的
树木—这是一个搅拌。 我仍然设置，并听取。 直接我可能
刚刚听到"我的-佑! 我佑!"那里。 这是很好的! 说
我"我佑! 我佑!"软如我所能，然后，我放出来的光

炒出窗上的棚。 然后我滑了下来到
地面上爬在树木之间，并确保有足够，还是汤姆
*索亚在等着我。

第二章

我们踮着脚尖走路径之间的树木背对着结束
的寡妇的花园，弯腰下因此作为分支机构不会
刮我们的头。 当我们穿过厨房里我爱上了一个根源
，并提出了一噪音。 我们scrouched下和规定。 沃特森小姐的大
黑人，名叫吉姆，是设在厨房门，我们可以看到他
非常清楚，因为有一个光在他身后。 他并
伸出他的脖子了大约一分钟，听。 然后他说:

"谁dah?"

他听了更多一些；然后他来踮着脚尖向下站在正确的
我们之间，我们可以触摸他。 嗯，有可能是几分钟
便有警告不一的声音，和我们都有如此靠近在一起。
有个地方，在我的脚踝，得痒，但我达森不刮；
然后我的耳朵开始痒；以及接下来我回来了，对我的
肩膀上。 似乎我死了如果我不能从头开始。 嗯，我已经注意到
的事情很多倍。 如果你是的质量，或在一个葬礼，
或试图睡觉的时候你是不是困了—如果你是无论哪里
哪里，它不会对你刮，为什么你会痒痒的所在
向上千的地方。 很快吉姆说:

"我说，谁是您？ 总是什么忙也带是你吗？ 狗我的猫ef我没有听到sumf'n。
嗯，我知道我的gwyne要做：我是gwyne设置下来在这里听
告诉我听到它agin."

所以他倒在地上时间流逝我和汤姆。 他靠在他
回了一棵树，并伸出他的腿部，直到他们中的一个最
感动的一个矿井。 我的鼻子开始痒。 它痒直到眼泪来
到我的眼睛。 但我达森不从头开始。 然后它开始痒在内。
接下来我发痒。 我不知道我是怎么回事设置
。 这miserableness继续作为多为六个或七分钟；但它
似乎是一个视线超过。 我是痒在十一个不同的地方
。 我觉得我无法忍受更多恩一分钟的时间，但我把我的

牙齿难和准备好的尝试。 然后吉姆开始呼吸重；
接下来他开始打呼噜—然后我很快就舒服了。

汤姆他一个标志，我的一个小的噪音他的嘴—
我们去爬行走在我们的手和膝盖。 当我们十岁的
脚离开汤姆*低声对我说，想打吉姆的树乐趣。
但是我说不，他可能会唤醒，并使一个干扰，然后他们会
找出我警告不在。 然后汤姆说，他没有得到足够的蜡烛，他
会滑倒在厨房并获得更多一些。 我不想让他尝试。 我
说吉姆可能会醒来。 但是汤姆希望resk；因此，我们滑动
在那里，并得到了三个蜡烛，汤姆奠定了五分在表中为
支付。 然后我们出去，我一身汗摆脱；但什么都不
会做汤姆，但他必须爬到哪里，吉姆，他的手和
膝盖，玩的东西在他身上。 我等待着，并且它似乎是一个好一会儿，
一切都是那么仍然和寂寞。

尽快，汤姆回来我们切断沿着道路，周围花园的
围栏，并通过和通过取立在陡峭的山顶上的另一侧
的房子。 汤姆说他滑倒了吉姆的帽子脱掉他的头挂在
一个肢体权利超过他，吉姆搅拌一点，但他没有醒来。
之后吉姆说女巫被迷惑了他，并把他关在一个精神恍惚，
并骑着他所有的状态，然后他在树下再
和挂在他的帽子肢体，以显示谁这样做。 和接下来时间的吉姆告诉
他说，他们骑着他下来到新奥尔良；并且，在此之后，每一次
他告诉其他传播也越来越多，直到通过和他所述，他们骑着他
的所有世界各地，并厌倦了他的死亡，他的背部是所有
马鞍-沸腾。 吉姆是可怕的骄傲，他得到了所以他
不会几乎没有注意到其他的黑鬼. 黑鬼也会来英里
听到吉姆告诉它，他被更多的看起来比任何黑鬼在
这个国家。 奇怪的黑人会的立场与他们的嘴打开，并
看看他，如果他是一个奇迹。 黑鬼总是说
关于女巫在黑暗中通过的厨房火；但是，每当一个是
在谈论，让在知道所有关于这样的事情，吉姆会发生在
并且说，"嗯! 什么你知道什么叫巫师？ "，那个黑鬼是
塞住了，不得不采取后座。 吉姆一直保持，五个中心的
片断脖子上有一串，并说，这是一个魅力的恶魔给
他用他自己的手中，并告诉他，他可以治愈的人用它

把女巫时，他只想说一些；
但是他从来没有告诉什么是他所说的。 黑鬼将来自所有
周围的存在，并给吉姆什么他们有，只是一视这五个
中心件；但是他们不会碰它，因为恶魔了他的
手就可以了。 吉姆是最毁了一个仆人，因为他得到了支持
帐户上有看到魔鬼并且被骑的女巫。

嗯，当汤姆和我有边缘的山顶我们看起来
走下来进入村庄，可以看到三个或四个灯光闪烁，
那里有病的人，可能；以及本星超过我们是闪闪发光的
过这么细微；以及由该村的河，整个公里宽泛，
以及可怕仍然和大。 我们去了山，找到乔哈珀
和本*罗杰斯的一个、两个或三个以上的男孩藏在古老
伊利步行者阁楼公寓. 所以我们脱离一个小艇和拉河两英里
半，到的大伤疤的山坡上，走上岸。

我们去了一个灌木丛，汤姆做了大家都发誓
保守秘密，并随后表现出他们中的一个孔山上，就在
最厚的一部分的灌木丛中。 然后我们点燃蜡烛，爬在我们的
手和膝盖。 我们去了约两个百码，然后将洞
打开了。 汤姆戳约之间的通道，并且很快
躲在墙里你不会一个注意到，有一个洞。
我们去了沿着一条狭窄的地方，并得到了一样的房间，所有的潮湿和
汗和冷，并有我们停了下来。 汤姆说：

"现在，我们将开始这伙强盗，并呼吁它的汤姆*索亚的
团伙。 每个人都想要加入已经得到了宣誓，并且写他的
名字是血。"

每个人都愿意。 因此，汤姆拿出一张纸上，他
写的誓言，并宣读它。 它发誓每一个男孩坚持要带，
从来没有告诉任何秘密；如果任何人做任何事任何
孩子在乐队，无论男孩被命令杀了那个人和他的
家庭必须这样做，他不能吃，他不能睡觉，直到他
杀了他们，砍死一个交叉在他们的乳房，这是标志的
带。 没有人，不属于本段可以使用该标记，
如果他没有，他必须被起诉；以及如果他做了一遍他必须被处死。
如果有人属于带说的秘密，他必须有
他的喉咙切，然后他的尸体被烧的灰烬散

周围的一切，他的名字涂抹掉的列表中用鲜血和不
再次提到了该团伙，但有一个诅咒穿上它，可以忘了
直到永远。

大家都说这是一个真正的美丽的誓言，并询问汤姆如果他得到
了他自己的头上。 他说，它的一些，但其余的海盗
的书籍和强盗的书籍，每一团伙，是高调了它。

有些人认为这会是很好的杀的家庭的男孩
告诉秘密。 汤姆说，这是一个好主意，所以他拿了一支铅笔和
写。 那么本*罗杰斯说：

"这是哈克，他hain没有家人，你打算怎么做
什么叫他吗？ "

"嗯，海恩不他有个爸爸?说："汤姆索亚.

"是的，他有一个父亲，但是你不能永远也找不到他这几天。 他
用来奠定喝醉了猪在伊利步行者阁楼公寓，但他hain未看到在
这些部分为一年或一年以上。"

他们谈过，他们是要规则我，因为他们
说的每个男孩必须有一个家庭或人杀，否则它
不会公正和平的其他人。 好了，没有人能想到
做什么—每个人都是难住了，并设置。 我是最好准备
哭了；但是有一次我想的一种方式，所以我提供给他们错过
Watson—他们可能会杀了她。 每个人都说：

"哦，她会做的。 这是所有权利。 哈克可以进来。"

然后，他们都坚持一个针在自己的手指让血液签署，
和我做我的标记在纸上。

"现在"，说本*罗杰斯，"什么是行业务的这个团伙的?"

"没什么只抢劫和谋杀，"汤姆说。

"但是，谁是我们去抢劫?—房屋或牲畜，或者"

"的东西！ 偷牛和这样的事情是不是抢劫；它是盗窃，"
说汤姆. "我们是不是窃贼。 这是不是有排序的风格。 我们是
强盗. 我们停止阶段和车在路上，有口罩，
并杀死的人，并把他们的手表和金钱。"

"我们必须总是杀人吗？ "

"哦，当然可以。 这是最好的。 一些当局认为不同，但主要是
它认为最好要杀死他们—除了一些，你带到山洞
里，并保持他们，直到他们赎."

"救赎? 那是什么？ "

"我不知道。 但他们就是这么做的。 我已经看到了它在书；等等当然，这就是我们要做。"

"但是我们如何才能做到这一点，如果我们不知道它是什么？ "

"为什么责怪的是，我们已经有了做到这一点。 不我告诉你它是的书？ 你想去做什么不同的书籍，
并获得所有的事情混乱？ "

"哦，这是所有非常精细的来说，汤姆，但是如何在全国
都是这些家伙会被救赎，如果我们不知道如何做到这一点，
他们吗？ —这就是我想要得到的。 现在，什么你觉得它是什么？ "

"嗯，我不知道。 但每'aps如果我们保持他们，直到他们
救赎，意味着我们保持他们，直到他们死亡。"

"现在，这些东西喜欢。 那将回答。 你为什么不能
说吗？ 我们会保持他们，直到他们赎死亡；以及一个
麻烦很大，他们将也吃了一切，并一直在努力
获得松动。"

"你怎么跟本*罗杰斯。 他们怎么能得到宽松时候有一个
守卫着他们，准备好拍下来，如果他们移动挂钩?"

"一个警卫！ 嗯，那是好的。 所以有人设置了一夜
并没有得到任何睡觉，只是因为看着他们。 我认为这是
愚蠢。 为什么不能一体采取一个俱乐部和赎金他们尽快
他们来到这里的？ "

"因为这不在书本这样—这就是为什么。 现在，本罗杰斯，做
你想做的事情经常的，或者不是吗？ —那是个想法。 你不
觉得这的人做的书知道什么是正确
的事情吗？ 你认为你可以学习他们什么？ 不过良好
的交易。 没有，先生，我们只是去赎金他们在正常方式。"

"所有的权利。 我不介意的话；但是我说它是一种欺骗的方式，无论如何。 说
我们赎做 的女人吗？ "

"嗯，本*罗杰斯，如果我很无知，因为你，我不会让。 杀了
的女人吗？ 没有，没有人见过什么书那样。 你
获取他们的洞穴，你总是有礼貌的馅饼给他们；以及通过
并由他们爱你，永远都不想回家。"

"嗯，如果是这样的方式我同意，但我不要采取任何股票。
强大的很快我们就会有洞穴么堆满了妇女、和

研究人员等待被救赎，这不会没有地方的
强盗。 但是，去吧，我没什么可说的。"

小汤米*巴恩斯是睡着了，现在，当他们唤醒他他被吓坏了，哭了，说他想回家回到他的马，也不想被一个强盗。

所以他们都取笑他，叫他哭了-宝贝，这让他疯狂，他说他会直接告诉所有的秘密。 但是汤姆给他五分保持安静，并且说，我们将所有的回家，并满足下个星期，和抢劫的人，杀了一些人。

本*罗杰斯说，他不能得出很多，只有星期日，因此，他想要开始下一个星期；但是所有的男孩说，这将是邪恶的，在星期天，那定居的事情。 他们同意获得一起和固定一天作为他们可以，那么我们选举的汤姆*索亚的第一个船长和乔哈珀第二长的团伙，并因此开始家庭。

我clumb了棚和悄悄潜入我的窗口之前一天被打破。 我的新衣服是所有的油脂上粘土质，以及我的狗-很累。

第三章

好吧，我有了一个良好的会在早上从旧的沃特森小姐在考虑我的衣服；但是寡妇，她没有责备，但只有清洗掉的油脂和粘土，而且看上去很抱歉，我以为我会表现得一段时间如果我能。 然后沃特森小姐她把我的衣橱和祈祷，但没有什么来的吧。 她告诉我每天祷告，并无论我要求为我会得到它。 但是它警告不如此。 我尝试了。 一旦我得到了一条鱼线，但没有挂钩。 它警告不了任何好的我不挂钩。 我试图用于挂钩的三倍或四倍，但不知何故我不能让它工作。通过和通过，有一天，我问的沃特森小姐要试试我的，但她说我是个傻瓜。 她从来没有告诉我为什么，我不能让它有办法。

我设置了一次后在树林中，有一个长期的考虑。我对自己说，如果一个主体可以得到任何他们祈祷，你为什么不执事Winn拿回他的钱丢失的猪肉? 为什么不能寡妇找回她的银鼻烟壶，这是偷走了? 为什么不能错过Watson脂肪

起来吗? 没有，我说到我的，没有什么。 我去告诉寡妇有关，她所述的东西一个机构可以获得通过祈祷它是"精神的礼物。" 这是太多了我，但她告诉我她的意思—我必须帮助其他人民，并且做的一切，我可以用于其他人，并寻找出他们所有的时间，并且从来没有想过我自己。这是包括沃特森小姐，我把它。 我在树林里走了出去并把它在我心中很长一段时间，但我无法看到没有利用它，除了对其他人，所以最后我估计我不会担心任何更多，但只是让它去。 有时候寡妇会带我一边谈论普罗维登斯的方式使个体的口水；但是，也许明天的沃特森小姐将会采取举行，并把它切下来了。 我判断，我可以看到，有两个Providences，以及一个可怜的家伙会的立场相当显示与对寡妇的普罗维登斯，但是，如果小姐沃森有他没有发出警告没有帮助他任何的更多。 我想这一切，觉得我会属于寡妇如果他想要我，但我看不出来怎么他是要将任何更好，然后于什么他面前，看到我是如此的无知，并使种低下和坏脾气的.

Pap他没有被视为一年多，这是舒适用于我，我不想看到他没有更多。 他以前总是鲸鱼我当他是清醒并能得到他的手在我身上，虽然我用来到树林里的大部分时间，当他周围。 好了，关于这一次，他被发现在河中淹死，大约十公里以上的城区，因此人们说。 他们判断这是他的，无论如何；所述的这淹死的人只是在他的大小，以及是衣衫褴褛，并寻常长的头发，这是所有象pap；但他们不能做什么出来的脸，因为它已经在水中的那么长，它警告不很象一面。 他们说他是浮在他的背上在水中。 他们把他埋葬了他在银行。 但我警告不舒服的长期的，因为我刚想到一些东西。 我知道强大的那一个淹死人不漂浮在他回来，但在他的脸上。 所以我知道，那么，这个警告不pap，但一个女人穿上了一个男人的衣服。 所以我很不舒服了。 我判断老人会再次通过和通过的，尽管我希望他不会的。

我们发挥的强盗现在，然后大约一个月，然后我辞职了。
所有的男孩子都没有。 我们没有抢劫没有人，没有打死任何人，但是
仅仅假装. 我们跳出来的树林里去充电的
下猪的驱动程序和妇女在车把花园的东西市场，
但是我们永远不会转给它们。 汤姆索亚称为猪"锭，"
他叫萝卜和东西"julery，"我们会去山洞
和巫师超过我们做了什么，以及有多少人们已经
杀害了和标记。 但我不能看见没有利润。 一时间，汤姆发送的一个
男孩跑关于城市与烈坚持，他称之为口号
(这是签署该团伙在一起)，然后他说他
已得到了秘密的消息，通过他的间谍，明天一整个包裹的西班牙
商人和富人一无菌要营地在山洞里的空心有两个
百象，六百骑骆驼，而超过一千
"萨姆特"骡子，所有加载di'monds, 他们没有
只警卫的四名士兵，所以我们会躺在
伏击，因为他叫它，杀死了很多匀的事情。 他说
我们必须漂亮了我们刀枪，并做好准备。 他绝不可能去
后甚至一个萝卜车但他必须有刀枪走遍了所有
它，虽然他们只是条和扫帚，你会
冲着他们直到你烂掉，然后他们警告说，不值得一个满口的
灰烬超过什么，他们是以前。 我不相信我们可以舔
这样的一群西班牙人和无菌的，但我想看看骆驼
和大象，所以我的手下一一天，星期六，在伏击;
以及当我们到了这个词我们赶出了森林和下山。
但是有警告，没有西班牙人和无菌，有警告，没有骆驼
，也没有象。 它警告不任何东西，但一个星期日学校的野餐，只有
一个引级。 我们捣毁它，并把儿童的
空心的，但我们从来没有得到任何东西，但一些甜甜圈和果酱，虽然
本*罗杰斯有一个布娃娃，乔哈珀拿到了一个赞美诗书和道;
和随后的教师收取，并使我们放弃一切和切割。 我
没有看到没有di'monds，我告诉Tom Sawyer如此。 他说有
载荷的他们那里，无论如何；并且他说那里是无菌的存在，也和
大象的事情。 我所说的，我们为什么不能看到它们，然后呢? 他说如果我
警告不那么无知，但读了一本书，名叫堂吉诃德，我会
知道没有要求。 他说，这是所有做过结界。 他说:

有数百名士兵在那里，并大象和财富，所以
，但是我们的敌人他称之为魔术师，他们已经把
整个事情变成一个婴幼儿日学校，只是出于恶意。 我说，所有
权利；然后事情我们要做的就是去魔术师。 汤姆
索亚说我是个傻瓜.

"为什么"他说，"一个魔术师可以打电话给很多的精灵，他们
将散列你最喜欢什么之前你能说杰克*罗宾逊。
他们是一样高大的树和作为大作为一个教堂。"

"好的，"我说，"s'pose我们得到了一些精灵来帮助我们—我们能不能
舔的其他人群中然后呢？"

"你怎么会得到他们？"

"我不知道。 他们怎么得到他们？"

"为什么，他们擦一个老锡灯或一个铁圈，然后精灵
来撕裂，与雷电的一个翻录周围的和
抽烟的-滚，一切他们告诉他们了，做到这一点。
他们不认为没有什么拉射塔上通过的根源，并
带一个星期天学校校长过头了—或任何
其他人。"

"谁使他们撕裂身边所以?"

"为什么，谁磨灯或环。 他们属于谁
磨灯或环，并且他们已经做了什么，他说。 如果他
告诉他们建立一个宫殿四十英里长出来的di'monds，并填写
完整的口香糖、或任何你想要的，并获取一个皇帝的
女儿从中国对于你结婚，他们已经做了—他们已经
做了它之前的太阳二天早上了。 和更多：他们已经得到
华尔兹，宫周围的国家，无论你想要它，你
明白了。"

"好的，"我说，"我认为他们是一群平面头没有保持
自己的宫殿'代替愚弄他们走的那样。 与什么
更多—如果我是他们中的一个，我会看到一个男人在杰里科之前，我将
把我的业务，来到他的摩擦的一个老锡灯。"

"你怎么谈的，哈克芬兰人。 为什么，你要来的时候他
擦它，你是否想到或没有。"

"什么！ 和我一样高的树和大教堂？ 好吧，那么，我会来，但我躺下，我会让那个男人爬上最高的树有时是在该国家。"

"哪里哪里，不是没用你谈谈，哈克. 你看起来不来知道任何东西，以某种方式完美的saphead."

我认为所有这超过两个或三天，然后我估计我将看看是否有任何东西。 我有一个老锡灯和一个铁圈，并在树林里走了出去，并揉揉直到我冒汗就像一个印第安人，计算建立一个宫和卖它，但是它警告没有使用，没有一个精灵来。 那么我判断，所有的东西只是一个汤姆*索亚的谎言。 我认为他相信一无菌和大象，但作为对我来说，我认为不同。 它的所有标记的一个星期日学校。

第四章

好吧，三个或四个月中运行，它是进入冬。 我已经向学校大多数的所有时间和可能拼写和阅读和写只是一点点，并能说的乘法表达六倍七个是第三十五个，我不觉得我可以不断获得的任何进一步的比，如果我是永远活着。 我不要采取没有股票在数学，无论如何。

首先我讨厌上学，但通过和通过我所以我可以忍受。 每当我得到了罕见的累了，我打了旷课，和隐瞒我得到了第二天所做的我很好和我欢呼。 所以我再去学校的容易得到。 我正在排序用于寡妇的方式，也和他们警告不那么刺耳的我。 生活在一个房和睡在一张床上拉上我相当紧张，但在此之前的寒冷的天气，我用来滑出并睡在树林里的时候，并且使得休息给我。 我喜欢旧的方式最好的但我得到的所以我喜欢这新的，过，一点点。 寡妇说我是来缓慢但确信，这样做非常令人满意的。 她说，她警告不感到羞耻的是我。

一天早上我发生了翻盐地窖里在早餐。 我达到了它的一些尽快，我可以扔我的左肩，继续关闭运气不好，但近的华生是以前的我，和

越过我了。 她说，"把你的手拿开，哈克；一个
烂摊子你总是！" 寡妇说好话对我来说，
但警告不要继续关闭运气不好，我知道，好了
够了。 我开始了，早餐后，感到担心和不稳定的，并且
想知道它会落在我身上，它是什么。
有办法保留了一些种类的运气不好，但这不是一个
他们的种类，所以我从来没有试图做任何事情，但只是捅沿着低
的精神和在观看。

我走到前面的花园，在阶梯clumb在哪里你
去过高级委员会围栏。 有一英寸的新雪
地,我看到某人的轨道。 他们来自
采石场和站在周围的阶梯，一段时间，然后去在周围
花园的围墙。 有趣的是他们没有来，经常周围。
我不能让它出来。 它很好奇，不知何故。 我要
跟随左右，但我弯下腰来看轨道第一次。 我没有
看到任何东西，但接下来，我没有。 有一个十字左边靴
的后跟了大钉子，远离魔鬼。

我在第二和闪耀下的山。 我看了看我的
肩膀每一个现在，那么，但是我没有看到任何人。 我是在法官
撒切尔的那么快，我能到达那里。 他说：

"为什么，我的孩子，你们都是出了一口气。 你有没有来找你的
兴趣?"

"没有，先生，"我说，"是否有一些给我吗？"

"哦，是的，半年一次是在昨天晚上—超过一百五十
美元。 相当的财富。 你最好让我投资这沿着
你的六万，因为如果你把它你会花钱。"

"没有，先生，"我说，"我不想花钱。 我不想让它在所有—也不是
六万，nuther. 我要你把它，我希望它送给你—
六万和所有。"

他看起来感到惊讶。 他似乎无法做出来。 他说：

"为什么，有什么可以为你的意思是，我的孩子？"

我说，"你不要问我问题吧，请。 你会拿走它
—你不会吗？"

他说：

"好吧，我感到困惑。 是什么问题?"

"请把它的，"我说，"不要问我什么—然后我不会
必须告诉没有谎言"。

他研究了一段时间，然后他说：

"哎呀-o! 我想我看到的。 你想卖你所有的财产给我—
不给它。 这是正确的想法。"

然后他写的东西在纸上读它的过去，并说：

"没有，你看到它说，'为一个考虑因素。' 这意味着我
买了它，你付钱给你。 这里是一个美元用于你。 现在你
签字。"

所以我签了字，离开了。

沃特森小姐是黑人，吉姆，有一个毛球一样大的拳头，
已经采取了行的第四胃的牛，并做他用
魔法。 他说有一个精神，内部和它知道
的一切。 所以我去他那天晚上，告诉他pap是再次在这里，
我找到他轨道中的积雪。 我想知道的是，什么他
要做的，是他打算留下吗？ Jim拿到了他的发球和
所说的东西，然后，他举行了它，并把它丢在地板上。
它倒下了非常稳固，只有轧约一英寸。 吉姆尝试了一遍，
然后另一个时间，而且它的行动只是一样的。 吉姆得到了他的膝盖，
并把他的耳朵反对它，并听取。 但是它警告没有使用；他说，它
不会说话。 他说有时候它会不会帮你没有钱。 我告诉
他我有一个老滑头季度假的警告没有好，因为在
黄铜表明通过银少了，它不会通过无论如何，即使
如果黄铜没有出现，因为它是如此光滑油腻的感觉，并使
将告诉它每时间。 (我觉得我不会说什么，有关
美元，我得到了法官.) 我说，这是非常糟糕的金钱，而是可能
发球就，因为也许它不会知道的
差异。 吉姆冶炼它与位，它和摩擦，并说他会
管理，使发球就会觉得它是好的。 他说，他将分
开的原爱尔兰马铃薯和坚持的季度之间并保持它在那里
所有的夜晚和第二天早上，你不能看见没有黄铜的，它不
油腻的感觉没有了，所以任何人在镇会把它在一分钟，
让我们单独一个发球。 嗯，我知道一个马铃薯会这样做之前，但是我
已经忘了它。

吉姆把季度下发球，并得到了下来，并听取
一次。 这一次，他说毛球是所有权利。 他说它会告诉
我的全部财产，如果我想它。 我说，去。 所以毛球谈
到吉姆，吉姆告诉我的。 他说：

"哟'ole父亲doan'知道yit是什么他是个-gwyne做。 有时候
他规格说他会去'的方式，en den agin他规他会留下来。 De生物多样性和生态系统服务'的方式是
res'易en让de ole男子采取自己的方式。 德伊的两个天使hoverin'
圆钢'回合他。 一紫外他们是白色的连接闪亮,en t'other一个是黑色的。
De白一个控释片他去右一点的同时，den德黑色帆在
en胸围。 一体不能告诉yit是哪一个gwyne取他de
las'. 但你是所有权利。 你gwyne有considable麻烦哟'
生活，en considable的喜悦。 有时候你gwyne件伤害、连接有时候
你gwyne件病；但是，每一次你的gwyne件以及阿恩.
德伊的两个女飞翔的关于你在溜溜的生活。 一个紫外线他们的光en t'other
一个是黑暗的。 一个丰富的连接t'other是宝'. 你的gwyne结婚de宝'
一个福斯特en de丰富的一个连接。 你想要保留'的方式巨无霸de水
尽的亲属、连接不行没有resk,'加濑它是向下在德法案dat
你的gwyne件挂。"

当我点燃我的蜡烛和走到我的房间，当晚坐在那里
pap—他自己!

第五章

我已经关闭的大门。 然后我转身他就在那儿. 我用来
害怕他所有的时间，他晒黑了我这么多。 我猜我是
害怕了现在也一样；但是在一分钟我看到的，我错了—这是之后的
第一次颠簸的，因为你可能会说，当我的呼吸种拴住了，他正在以
意想不到的；但是正确的走后我看到我警告不怕他值得
bothring。

他是最五十个，他看着它。 他的头发长而纠缠不清
和油腻、和挂下来，你可以看到他的眼睛闪闪发光
就像他背后的葡萄。 这是所有黑色，没有灰色的，所以是他漫长的，
混乱的胡须。 有警告，没有颜色中他的脸，他的脸部
表现出的；它是白色的，而不是像另一个人是白色的，但是一个白色使
一个体生病，一个白色使一个人体的肉体爬树-蛤蟆白色，

鱼肚白。 作为他的衣服—只是衣衫褴褛，这是所有。 他有一个脚踝上休息的t'other膝关节；启动上，脚被捣毁，和两他的脚趾坚持通过和他的工作他们。 他的帽子是铺在地板上—一个老黑精打采的顶塌陷，像盖子。

我站在一个-看看他，他那个-看着我，他的主席向后倾斜一点。 我设定的蜡烛下来。 我注意到窗户上；因此他clumb在通过棚。 他不停地看我。 通过和通过，他说：

"淀粉衣服—很。 你认为你是一个很好的处理的一个很大的错误，不是吗？"

"也许我也许我不是的，"我说。

"你不给我无o'你的嘴唇，"他说。 "你一把相当多的装饰的，因为我已经离开了 我要你挂钩之前，我与你做。 你受过教育，也他们说—可以阅读和写。 你觉得你最好'n'你的父亲，现在，没有你，因为他可以不? 我会把它拿出来的。 谁告诉你你可能会插手这样hifalut'n'愚蠢的，好吗？—谁告诉你你可以吗？"

"寡妇。 她告诉我。"

"寡妇，嘿?—和谁告诉寡妇，她可以把她铲有关的事，不关她的事业?"

"没有人从来没有告诉她."

"好吧，我了解她如何染指。 看这里—你放下这学校里，你听见了吗？ 我了解人们带来了一个男孩来摆架子在他自己的父亲和我们在更好'n'他是什么。 你还是让我抓到你鬼混的那学校再次，你听到了吗？ 你母亲不可能阅读，并且她不能写信，nuther，之前，她死了。 没有家庭无法之前，他们死亡。 我不能；以及在这里，你是个肿自己最喜欢这一点。 我是不是该名男子站在它—你听见了吗？ 说，让我听到你读"。

我带了一本书，并开始了一些关于华盛顿将军和战争。 当我读大约一个半一分钟，他取出这本书的一个重击他的手，把整个房子。 他说：

"它是如此。 你可以做到这一点。 我有我的怀疑当你告诉我的。 现在看看这里你停下来，把多余的装饰。 我不会具有它。 我会放你，

我的智者；以及如果我抓到你这学校我会tan你好。 第一
，你知道，你会得到宗教的,也是。 我从来没有看到这样一个儿子。"

他花了一个小小的蓝色和黄色图片的一些奶牛和一个男孩，
并且说：

"这是什么?"

"这是他们给我的学习我的经验教训良好"。

他撕毁它，并说：

"我会给你更好的东西—我会给你一个牛皮。"

他有一个-喃喃自语和a-咆哮一分钟，然后他说：

"你不是一个甜甜的气味的花花公子吗？ 有床和床上用品;
和一个'n'-玻璃；和一块地毯在地板上—和你自己的
父亲要睡眠的猪在伊利步行者阁楼公寓. 我从来没有看到这样一个儿子。 我
打赌我会需要一些o'这些褶边了o'你之前我完成了你。
为什么，不过是没有结束你的播出—他们说你是丰富的。 嘿?—怎么样
？"

"他们的谎言—那是怎么样。"

"听我说—记住你怎么跟我说话，我是一个常设对所有我
可以站在现在—所以不要给我无上海社会科学院。 我已经在城两天，
我hain不什么也没听到但关于你的拜因丰富。 我听说它掉
下河，也是。 这就是为什么我来了。 你给我这笔钱-
明天—我要它。"

"我hain不会得到任何钱。"

"这是一个谎言。 撒切尔法官的得到了它。 你混帐它. 我想它。"

"我hain不会得到任何钱，我告诉你。 你问的撒切尔法官；他会告诉
你相同。"

"所有的权利。 我会问他，我会让他pungle，也是，或者我会知道的
原因。 说，你有多少钱在你的口袋里？ 我想它。"

"我hain不只拿到一美元，我想到—"

"不作任何区别你想要什么它对你只是它的外壳
出来。"

他把它点看，如果它是好的，然后他说他
要去镇，以得到一些威士忌；所说的他没有喝一整天。
当他有了在棚他把他的头在再次讨论我
把上的褶边，并试图以更好地比他；而当我估计
他已经走了，他回来把他的头再告诉我

介意关于学校，因为他是要把我舔我
如果我没有下降。

第二天，他喝醉了，和他去了撒切尔法官和
bullyragged他，并试图让他放弃这笔钱，但他
不能，然后，他发誓他会让法律的力量他。

法官和寡妇去法得到法院要带我
离开他，让他们中的一个是我的守护者；但这是一个新的
法官，刚刚来的，他不知道的老人；所以他说
法院不能干涉并单独的家庭，如果他们能够帮助它；说
他会druther不采取一个儿童从其父亲。 所以撒切尔法官和
寡妇不得不退出就业。

高兴的老人，直到他不能休息。 他说要牛
我直到我是黑色的，蓝色的，如果我没提出了一些钱用于他。 我
借来的三个美元的撒切尔法官和pap把它和有
喝醉了去吹周围和咒骂和百日咳和
携带；和他保持它所有的城镇，一个锡泛，直到最
午夜，然后他们监禁他，而明天他们把他之前法庭，
并被判入狱，他再次进行为期一周。 但他说他很满意，说他
是老板的儿子，他会让它的温暖他。

当他离开了新的法官说，他要作一个男子
的他。 所以他把他带到自己的房子，并给他穿上了干净的，
很好，了他早餐和晚餐和晚餐的家庭，
并且只是老派给他，可以这么说。 和晚饭后他谈到
他关于节制和这样的事情，直到老的人哭了，说
他会是一个傻瓜和骗了他的生活；但现在他是一个要
翻开新的一页，并被一个男人不会感到羞愧的，
他希望法官会帮助他并不是看不起他。 法官
说，他可以拥抱了他他们的话，所以他哭了，他的妻子，她哭了，
再次；pap说他会被一个男人，总是被人误解
之前，法官说，他相信它。 老人说什么一个
男人想要这是下的同情，以及法官所说的它是如此；
所以他们哭一次。 当这是睡前的老男人上升和
保持出他的手，并说：

"看看吧，先生们和女士；采取一个持；摇晃。
有一个方面，是一个猪；但它不是那么没有更多的；它是的

一个男人这就是开始新的生活，和将死之前他会
回来。 你标记的话—不要忘了我说过他们。 这是一个干净的手
现在动摇它—不别怕。"

因此，他们震撼了这一前一后，周围的一切，并哭了。 该
法官的妻子，她吻了一下。 然后老人，他签署了一的承诺成
他的标志。 法官说，这是最神圣的时间记录的，或者什么
样的。 然后他们夹着老人为一个美丽的房间，这是
空余的房间，以及在夜间某些时候，他得到了强有力的渴和
clumb出的门廊-屋顶和下滑的一个支柱和交易他的
新外套一壶第四十杆，并clumb再回来有一个良好古老的
时间；以及向白天他爬出来了，喝醉了作为一个小提琴手，
推出了门廊，并打破了他的左臂在两个地方， 和大多数
冻死了当有人发现了他之后的太阳。 而当他们
来看看那个空余的房间，他们不得不采取探测之前
可能导航。

法官他觉得那种疼痛。 他说，他认为一个机构可以
改革的老人用猎枪，也许,但是他不知道没有其它
方式。

第六章

嗯，很快的老人和周围，然后他
去了撒切尔法官在法庭上让他放弃这笔钱，
而他又对我来说，也不停止上学。 他逮住我几
次惨败我，但我去学校一样的，而且躲开
他逃脱他的大部分时间。 我不想去学校多
以前，但是我估计我现在去尽管pap。 这项法律的审判是一个缓慢的
商业似乎喜欢他们警告永远不会开始；所以
，然后每一个现在我想借用两个或三个美元的法官对
他说，让获得cowhiding. 每次他拿到钱他就
醉；以及每次他喝醉了他提出的该隐城镇周围；并且
他每次提出该隐他有关进监狱。 他只是适合—这种
事情是对在他的路线。

他得到了挂在寡妇的太多了，所以她告诉他
最后，如果他没有放弃使用周围还有她会使麻烦

他。 嗯，他不是疯了？ 他说他会告诉谁是Huck
Finn是老大。 所以他看了我一天的春天，逮住了
我，把我的河大约三英里的一个小艇，并越境
到伊利诺斯州海岸在那里被伍迪和有警告，没有任何房屋但
一个旧日的小屋在一个地方的木材是那么厚你找不到
它如果你不知道在哪里。

他让我用他所有时间，我没机会逃跑。
我们住在那个老屋和他总是锁门和把钥匙放
在他头部的夜晚。 他有枪，他已经偷走了，我估计，我们
捕鱼和狩猎，那是我们的生活。 每一个小时他
把我锁在下去到商店，三英里的渡轮，并且
交易的鱼类和野威士忌，取家庭和喝醉了
有一个很好的时间，并舔我的。 寡妇，她发现我在那里
和通过，她发送一个人过来试着抓住我，但pap
开他的枪，它警告说不久之后，直到我是用来
是我，很喜欢它—但所有的牛皮的一部分。

它是一种惰性和欢乐，裁舒适的所有天吸烟
和渔业，没有图书也没有研究。 两个月或更多的运行以来，和
我的衣服了所有的衣衫褴褛和污垢，我没有看到我怎么会没有得
像这么好的遗孀，在那里，你必须洗,吃上一盘，
并梳起来，上床睡觉，并得到了定期的、并将永远困扰着
一本书，并有老沃特森小姐啄你所有的时间。 我
不想回去没有更多。 我已经不再骂人，因为
寡妇的不喜欢它但是现在我把它再次因为子宫颈有没有没有
反对意见。 这是很好的时候在树林里，把它所有的
周围。

但是，通过和通过pap有太方便与他的乡下人每，我不能
忍受它。 我是所有伤痕。 他得要走了这么多，也并
锁定了我。 一旦他把我锁在和已经走了三天。 这是
可怕寂寞。 我判断他已经得到了淹死了，我不会
获得任何的更多。 我很害怕。 我做了我的心我会修复了
一些方法离开那里。 我曾试图走出这小屋很多时间，
但是我找不到没有办法。 有警告不一窗口就足够大的一个
的狗获得通过。 我不能让的chimbly；它过于狭窄。 这
门是厚橡木板。 Pap是相当小心，不要离开

刀或任何在机舱当他走了；我想我已经猎杀
的地方尽一百倍；嗯，我是最所有的时间
，因为它是唯一的方式把时间。 但这次我
找到一些东西最后，我发现了一个古老的生锈的木头-看到没有任何
处理的；它是规定之间的一个椽和隔板的屋顶。 我
的润滑起来并开始工作。 有一个古老的马毯子钉在
对记录在远端的小屋后面的表格，以保持
风吹通过的缝隙并把蜡烛。 我得
下表，并提出了毯子，并开始工作以看见一部分
的大底退出—大到足以让我通过。 嗯，这是一个
良好的长期工作，但我是越来越朝着结束它的时候我听到pap的
枪在树林里。 我摆脱的迹象，我的工作，并放弃了
毯子，躲在我看到了，很快pap来。

Pap警告不在一个良好的幽默感—所以他是他自然的自我。 他说他
是镇下，一切都是错误的。 他的律师说，他
认为他会赢得他的诉讼和得到的钱，如果他们曾经
开始的审判；但有的方式把它关闭长时间，而
撒切尔法官知道如何做到这一点。 他说，人们允许那里会
是另一个审判以让我离开他给我的寡妇为
我的监护人，他们猜测它将赢得这个时候。 这震撼了我了
相当大的，因为我不想回到寡妇的任何更多的
和可以拥挤和sivilized，他们叫它。 然后老人
得到骂人，讨论一切，每个人都他可以想到的，
然后讨论他们再次确定他没有跳过的任何
和在那之后他抛光的一种一般的坏话的所有圆，
其中包括一个相当大的包裹的人，他不知道
名称，并因此称他们为什么-他的名字时，他得到了他们，并
正与他骂人.

他说，他希望看到寡妇得到我。 他说他会
看出，如果他们试图来任何这样游戏对他知道的
一个地方的六个或七英里关闭，以stow我在，在那里他们会追捕直到
他们放弃了他们却找不到我。 这让我很不安
，但只有一分钟，我估计我不会留在手上，直到他
有这样的机会。

老男人让我去小艇和获取的事情，他已经得到了。
有一个大会第五十镑一袋玉米粉和面的熏肉、
弹药和四个加仑桶的威士忌，和一本旧书和两名
报纸，用于填充，除了一些拖车。 我随了一个载荷，并且又
回和设置下来的弓的小艇到休息。 我想这一切结束了，
我估计我会走的枪和一些线路，并采取
树林里的时候我跑了。 我猜我也不会呆在一个地方，但
只是流浪汉的权利在全国各地，主要是晚上时间，以及狩猎和捕鱼
，以保持活动，所以得到那么远，老人也不是寡妇
永远不能找我任何的更多。 我判断，我看到和离开那
晚如果pap喝醉了足够的，并且我认为他会。 我有所以
我不知多长时间我住到老的人的叫喊和求
我无论我是睡着还是淹死.

我有的东西所有的小屋，然后是关于黑暗中。 同时，
我煮晚饭的老人把一口或两个有
热身，去剥了。 他已经喝醉过在城镇，
并规定在阴沟里所有的夜晚，他被眼前的景象来看待。 一个人体
会以为他是亚当—他只是所有的泥浆。 每当他
酒开始工作，他永远去了govment，这一次，他
说：

"这个叫govment! 为什么，只是看看吧，看看是什么样子的。
这里是法律规定一个期准备采取一个男人的儿子离开他—一个
人自己的儿子，他已经有了所有的麻烦和所有焦虑症和
所有的费用提高。 是的，只是因为那个男人已经得到了，儿子提出的
最后一个，准备好了去工作，开始做suthin他，给
他一个休息，法律上去他。 他们叫这个govment!
这还不是全部，nuther. 法律背，古老的撒切尔法官和
帮助他让我出去o'我的财产。 这里是什么样的法律：该
法律需要一个男人的价值六千美元以及上'ards和果酱他
进入一个古老的陷阱的一种机舱像这样让他去衣服，
不是fitten一猪。 他们叫这个govment! 一个人不能获得他的权利
，在一个govment这样。 有时我一个强大的概念刚刚离开该
国的良好和切。 是的，我告诉他们如此；我说过古老的撒切尔夫人因
为他的脸部。 很多他们听说过我可以告诉我所说的话。 我说，两
美分我会离开指责国家，从来没有一个-它附近的阿恩.

他们的话。 我说看着我的帽子—如果你打电话是一顶帽子—但是，盖提出了其余的下降，直到它的下面的我的下巴，然后这是不正确地一顶帽子所有，但是更多喜欢我的头被猛了通过jint o'炉烟。 看看吧，我说—这帽子让我穿上—一个最富有的男人在这个镇，如果我可以git我的权利。

"哦，是的，这是一个美妙的govment，精彩。 为什么，看这里。有一个免费的，黑鬼有来自俄亥俄州的一mulatter，大多数作为白作为一个白人。 他有洁白的衬衫你曾经看过，最闪亮的帽子；以及没有一个人在该镇的那一作为现的衣服为什么他和他一块金表和链，以及一个银头甘蔗的awfulest老灰头nabob的状态。 你怎么认为?他们说他是一个p'fessor在一个学院，而且可以谈所有各种语言，和知道的一切。 这不是武汉科技大学. 他们说，他可以投票时他在家里。 好了，让我出去。 我认为，什么是该国的一个来? 这是'经文一天，我正要去和投票自己，如果我警告不太醉到那里的；但当他们告诉我有一个国家在这个国家，在那里他们会让那个黑鬼投票，我就出来。 我说我永远不会投票，阿恩. 他们的话我说，他们都听我的话；并且该国可能腐烂为所有我—我永远不会投票agin只要我活着。 和看到的酷的方式，黑鬼—为什么，他不会给我的道，如果我没有把他o'方式。 我说的人，为什么不是这黑鬼把在拍卖和出售? —这就是我想要知道。 什么你觉得他们说什么吗? 为什么，他们说他不能出售直到他会一直在的状态六个月，他没有直存在，长。 那里，现在—这是一个标本。 他们管这个叫govment，不能卖出一个自由的黑人，直到他一直在的状态六个月。 这里有一个govment，呼吁本身govment，并让一个govment，并认为这是一个govment，但得设置股还为六个月之前，它可能需要举行一个窜来窜去，偷窃,地狱,白色衬衫的小自由的黑人，以及—"

Pap是agoing上，因此他从来没有注意到他的旧柔软的双腿被带他来，让他神魂颠倒在浴缸的咸猪肉和咆哮两小腿，他的讲话是所有热的那种语言的主要是霍夫在黑人和govment，虽然他得到浴缸一些，太，所有沿，这里和那里。 他跳周围的小屋

相当可观的，第一条腿，那么其持有第一个申，然后另一个，最后他让他的左脚有一个突和取桶剑拔弩张的踢。 但是它警告不良好的判断，因为这是启动了几个他的脚趾泄漏出来的前结束，所以现在他提出的一个号啕大哭，相当成一体的毛提高，下他走在泥土，以及卷存在，并举行了他的脚趾；和咒骂他做过然后放过任何东西，他曾经做过以前。 他这么说他自己之后。 他听到了老Sowberry Hagan在他最好的日子，他说这放过他了，但我认为这是桩上，也许。

晚饭后pap取水罐，并说他有足够的威士忌有两个酒鬼和一个震颤性谵妄. 这一直是他的话。 我判断，他将喝醉在大约一个小时，然后我偷钥匙，或看到自己的一个或t'other. 他喝了，喝了，并跌倒在他的毯子和通过；但运气不运行我的方式。 他没有声音睡着了，但是感到不安。 他呻吟，呻吟和惨败围绕此办法和很长一段时间。 最后，我有这么昏昏欲睡我不能让我的眼睛打开所有我能做，所以我才知道什么我是关于我的声音睡着了，蜡烛的燃烧。

我不知道多久我睡着了，但是突然有一个可怕的尖叫，我是。 有pap寻找野生，跳过周围的每一个这样大喊大叫约蛇。 他说，他们是爬上他的腿，然后他会得到一个跳跃和尖叫声，并且说，一个已经咬了他的脸颊—但是我不能没有看到蛇。 他开始和运行一轮轮机舱，喊叫"把他关掉! 把他关掉! 他咬了我的脖子上!" 我从来没有看到一个男人看起来如此狂野的眼睛。 很快，他是所有累得精疲力尽了，摔了下来喘气；然后他滚过美好的快踢东西，每哪种方式，引人注目，并抓住在空中与他的手中，并尖叫着说有魔鬼一个-抓住他。 他穿的通过和通过，并奠定了仍然是一个同时，呻吟。 然后他奠定了斯蒂勒，并且没有做一个声音。 我可以听到猫头鹰和野狼走在树林里，它似乎是可怕的。 他躺在角落。 通过与由他提出了一部分的方式，并倾听，他的头部向一侧。 他说，非常低：

"流浪汉流浪汉流浪汉；这就是该死的；流浪汉流浪汉流浪汉;
他们来了之后我，但我不会去。 哦，他们在这里！ 不要接触
我—不！ 手拿开—他们很冷，让我们去。 哦，让一个可怜的魔鬼！"

然后他去了四肢着地和爬乞求他们让
他一个人，他推出自己在他的毯子和打滚在
老松表，仍然是一个乞讨；以及然后他又要哭了。 我能
听到他的毯子。

通过与由他推出和跳上他的脚看的野生，
他看到我和去了我。 他追我一轮一轮地
带扣把刀，叫我天使的死亡，并说他会
杀了我，然后我不能对他没有更多。 我恳求，并告诉
他我只是哈克，但他笑了这样一个screechy的笑声，咆哮着
和讨论，并保持在追我。 一旦当我把短期和
躲在他的手臂他抢了我的夹克之间
我的肩膀上,我以为我走了，但我滑出去的夹克快
如闪电，并且救自己。 很快，他是累了，
下降了他背对门，并说他想休息一
分钟，然后杀了我。 他把他的刀切下了他，并说他会
睡得到强有力的，然后他会看到谁是谁。

所以他打瞌睡很快。 通过并由我的老分下的
主席和clumb为容易，因为我可以，不要作出任何噪音，并得到了
下枪 我悄悄的笔挺下来，确保它被装载，
那么我奠定了整个萝卜桶，朝pap，并设置了
它后面等待对他的搅拌。 和如何缓和仍然时有没有拖
着。

第七章

"混帐！ 什么你什么叫?"

我睁开眼睛，看看周围，试图使我
。 它是太阳后，我已经声睡着了。 Pap是站
在我看酸和生病了,也是。 他说:

"什么你在干什么用这种枪？"

我判断他不知道什么什么他一直在做，所以我
说:

"有人想要获得，所以我躺用于他。"
"为什么你不唤醒我？"
"嗯，我试过，但是我不能，我不能让步。"
"嗯，所有权利。 不要站在那里palavering所有的一天，但与你看，如果有的鱼线上早餐。 我会在一分钟。"

他打开门，我清理出去了河银行。 我注意到一些片断肢和这样的东西浮动下，洒的树皮，所以我知道河里已经开始上升。 我估计我会有很大的时间现在如果我是在城市。 六月上升用来将一直运气对我来说，因为尽快上升，从这里开始来cordwood浮动下，和日志筏—有时也有十几个日志在一起；因此，所有你需要做的就是赶上他们和他们出售的木材厂和锯木厂。

我去了银行与一个的眼睛了pap和t'other一个出于什么的兴起可能会取。 好吧，有一次来了一个独木舟，只是一个美人，大约十三或十四英尺长，也能高的像只鸭子。 我拍的头一关闭银行的像一只青蛙、衣服和所在，并袭击了独木舟。 我只是预期还会有人躺下来，因为人们经常所做的，欺骗人们，而当一个人了拉一个小艇出最为它们会提高和嘲笑他。 但是它警告说不让这个时间。 这是一个漂独木舟足够肯定，我clumb在和划着她的上岸。 我认为，老人将会高兴的，当他看到这个—她是值得十美元。 但是当我到岸pap是不是在视觉呢，因为我跑她变成一个小溪就像一个沟壑中，所有挂在葡萄树和树林，我袭击了另一个想法：我判断，我把她藏好，然后，'代替考虑到树林里的时候我跑了，我会去的河，约有五十英里的营地在一个地方对良好，并没有这样一个粗略的时间流浪在脚。

这是非常接近消灭，我想我听见了老男人的到来所有的时间，但我把她藏，然后我出来，看着围绕着一堆柳树，还有是老人的道路上的一块只是绘画一个珠上有鸟用他的枪。 所以他没有看到任何东西。

当他得我很努力它把立一个"小跑"的路线。 他虐待我一点对于正在以缓慢的，但我告诉他我掉在河里，

是什么让我这么长时间。 我知道他会看到我是湿的，然后
他会问问题。 我们得到了五鲶鱼断线去了
家园。

同时，我们下岗早餐后睡觉了，我们都是
穿着出来，我想，如果我可以修复了某种方式保持pap
和寡妇想跟着我，这将是一个certainer东西
比相信运气，获得足够远关闭之前，他们错过了我，你
看，所有种东西可能会发生。 嗯，我没看到任何一
段时间，但通过和通过pap提出了一分钟喝的另一个桶的
水，他说：

"另一个时间一个人来的-窜来窜去，这里你唤醒我，
你听见了吗？ 那个人警告不在这里没有好处。 我会一枪杀了他。 下次
你唤醒我的，你听到了吗？ "

然后他降下来，去睡觉了，但什么他
一直在说给我的想法我想要的。 我对自己说，我可以解决它
现在，所以没有人不想跟着我。

大约十二点，我们竟然和去了银行。 这
条河是未来的漂亮的快速和大量的浮要通过在
上升。 通过和随之而来的部分木筏—九日志的快在一起。
我们出去的小艇和拖上岸。 然后我们吃了晚饭。
任何人，但pap会等待着看到这一天通过，以便赶上
更多的东西，但警告不pap的风格。 九个日志是足够的
时间，他必须把权利交给镇和销售。 所以他把我关在
了小艇，并开始拖筏子的一半左右，过去三个。 我
判断他不会回来的那个晚上。 我等待着，直到我估计他已经
有了一个良好的开端，然后我出来带我看到，去工作日志
。 之前，他是t'other侧河我的孔；他
和他的木筏只是一粒在水上走那边。

我拿了一袋玉米餐，并把它的独木舟藏，
猛的藤蔓和分支机构分开，并把它放在；然后我做了
同样的侧的熏肉，然后威士忌酒壶。 我花了所有的咖啡
和糖有，所有的弹药；我花絮；我拿
水桶和葫芦，我参加了一个北斗七星和一个锡杯子，和我老看见和
两个毯子和锅和咖啡壶。 我把鱼线和
比赛和其他的东西—一切都是值得一分钱。 我清理

出发的地方。 我想要一把斧子，但是没有任，只有一个出
的柴堆，我知道为什么我要离开的。 我拿出
枪，现在我已完成。

我不得不穿着地面一个很好的处理爬出来的洞和
拖了这么多东西。 所以我固定好，因为我可以从
外部通过散射灰尘的地方，其复盖平滑
和木屑。 然后我修好了一块志回到自己的位置，并把
两块岩石下和一个反对它，以保持它在那里，这是弯折了
那个地方并不碰地。 如果你站在四五英尺
远，不知道这是啥样，你就不会从来没有注意到它；而
且，这是回舱内的，它警告说不可能有人
会去鬼混那里。

这是所有草清楚的独木舟，所以我没有离开轨道。 我跟着
周围看到的。 我站在的银行看着过河。 所有安全。
所以我拿着枪去了一块进入树林，是狩猎
周围的一些鸟类的时候我看到一个野猪猪快去野生在
他们的底裤之后，他们已经得到了来自草原农场。 我杀了这
家伙并且把他带到营地。

我拿了斧子砸在门。 我打败它和砍死它
了相当大的-这样做。 我把猪，并把他带回几乎
所表和黑进他的喉咙有斧子，把他放倒在
地上流血；我说的地面，因为它是地面的硬盘包装，
并没有板。 好了，接下来我的一个老袋，并把很多大石头在
它—我能拖和我一开始就从猪，并把它拖到
大门和穿过树林到河边和倾倒它，和
它沉没的视线。 你可以很容易看到那东西已经
拖过地。 我也希望汤姆*索亚是存在的，我知道他
会感兴趣在这种业务，并扔在花哨的
接触。 没有人可以传播自己喜欢的汤姆*索亚在这样的事情
。

好了，最后我拿出一些我的头发，并血斧头良好，
并坚持它在后面，并把斧子在角落里。 然后我
的猪和他对我的胸我的夹克(因此他不能滴灌)
直到我得到了一个很好的片下面的房子，然后甩了他入
河流。 现在我想到了别的东西。 所以我去并得到一袋

餐和我老看见了走出独木舟，并获取他们的房子。 我
把袋子里使用它的立场，并撕开一个洞的底部，
它看到了，有警告，没有刀叉的地方—pap
所做的一切都是他扣刀关于烹饪。 然后我进行
的大袋大约一百码的草和通过的柳
东的房子里，以一个浅水湖泊那是五英里宽的和充满
冲和鸭子太，你可能会说，在本赛季。 有一个脱落
或一个小溪导致出它的另一面那里，我不
知道，但它没有去河边。 吃饭筛选出，并由一个
小小的跟踪所有方式的湖泊。 我放弃了pap的油石有太多，所
以看起来像它已经完成的事故。 然后我被绑rip在
饭袋一串，所以它不会泄漏有更多，并把它和我
看到了独木舟。

它是关于黑暗现在，所以我放弃了独木舟下河下
一些柳树挂在银行，并等待在月亮上升。 我
快到柳；然后我咬了一口吃的，并通过和通过奠定了
在独木舟烟管，并奠定了一个计划。 我对自己说，他们会
跟踪那岩石满袋的海岸，然后拖到
河对我来说。 他们会跟着那顿饭跟踪到湖边去
浏览下河，导致出它要找的劫匪杀了
我，把东西。 他们永远不会打猎河的任何东西，但
我死去的尸体。 他们很快就会厌倦那，不打扰没有更多
关于我的。 所有权利；我可以阻止任何地方我想要的。 杰克逊的岛屿是
对我来说不够好，我知道，岛屿的很好，没人会
来。 然后我可以桨到镇晚上，早产的周围
，收拾东西我想要的。 杰克逊岛的地方。

我是很累，并且该第一件事我知道我睡着了。 当我
醒来的时候我不知道我在那里一分钟。 我看了看
四周，有点害怕。 然后我记住了。 河里看着和
英里。 月亮是如此明亮的我可以一个计算漂移的记录得
走了-滑倒，黑色，仍然，数百码从岸边。
一切都已经死了平静，并且它看起来晚了，闻起来晚了。 你
知道我什么意思—我不知道的话把它用。

我花了一个良好的差距和一个延伸，只是要放掉，
开始的时候我听到一个声音在水中。 我听了。 很快我

made it out. It was that dull kind of a regular sound that comes from oars working in rowlocks when it's a still night. I peeped out through the willow branches, and there it was—a skiff, away across the water. I couldn't tell how many was in it. It kept a-coming, and when it was abreast of me I see there warn't but one man in it. Think's I, maybe it's pap, though I warn't expecting him. He dropped below me with the current, and by and by he came a-swinging up shore in the easy water, and he went by so close I could a reached out the gun and touched him. Well, it WAS pap, sure enough—and sober, too, by the way he laid his oars.

I didn't lose no time. The next minute I was a-spinning down stream soft but quick in the shade of the bank. I made two mile and a half, and then struck out a quarter of a mile or more towards the middle of the river, because pretty soon I would be passing the ferry landing, and people might see me and hail me. I got out amongst the driftwood, and then laid down in the bottom of the canoe and let her float. I laid there, and had a good rest and a smoke out of my pipe, looking away into the sky; not a cloud in it. The sky looks ever so deep when you lay down on your back in the moonshine; I never knowed it before. And how far a body can hear on the water such nights! I heard people talking at the ferry landing. I heard what they said, too—every word of it. One man said it was getting towards the long days and the short nights now. T'other one said THIS warn't one of the short ones, he reckoned—and then they laughed, and he said it over again, and they laughed again; then they waked up another fellow and told him, and laughed, but he didn't laugh; he ripped out something brisk, and said let him alone. The first fellow said he 'lowed to tell it to his old woman—she would think it was pretty good; but he said that warn't nothing to some things he had said in his time. I heard one man say it was nearly three o'clock, and he hoped daylight wouldn't wait more than about a week longer. After that the talk got further and further away, and I couldn't make out the words any more; but I could hear the mumble, and now and then a laugh, too, but it seemed a long ways off.

I was away below the ferry now. I rose up, and there was Jackson's Island, about two mile and a half down stream, heavy timbered and

standing up out of the middle of the river, big and dark and solid, like a steamboat without any lights. There warn't any signs of the bar at the head—it was all under water now.

It didn't take me long to get there. I shot past the head at a ripping rate, the current was so swift, and then I got into the dead water and landed on the side towards the Illinois shore. I run the canoe into a deep dent in the bank that I knowed about; I had to part the willow branches to get in; and when I made fast nobody could a seen the canoe from the outside.

I went up and set down on a log at the head of the island, and looked out on the big river and the black driftwood and away over to the town, three mile away, where there was three or four lights twinkling. A monstrous big lumber-raft was about a mile up stream, coming along down, with a lantern in the middle of it. I watched it come creeping down, and when it was most abreast of where I stood I heard a man say, "Stern oars, there! heave her head to stabboard!" I heard that just as plain as if the man was by my side.

There was a little gray in the sky now; so I stepped into the woods, and laid down for a nap before breakfast.

Chapter VIII

THE sun was up so high when I waked that I judged it was after eight o'clock. I laid there in the grass and the cool shade thinking about things, and feeling rested and ruther comfortable and satisfied. I could see the sun out at one or two holes, but mostly it was big trees all about, and gloomy in there amongst them. There was freckled places on the ground where the light sifted down through the leaves, and the freckled places swapped about a little, showing there was a little breeze up there. A couple of squirrels set on a limb and jabbered at me very friendly.

I was powerful lazy and comfortable—didn't want to get up and cook breakfast. Well, I was dozing off again when I thinks I hears a deep sound of "boom!" away up the river. I rouses up, and rests on my elbow and listens; pretty soon I hears it again. I hopped up, and went and looked out at a hole in the leaves, and I see a bunch of smoke laying on

the water a long ways up—about abreast the ferry. And there was the ferryboat full of people floating along down. I knowed what was the matter now. “Boom!” I see the white smoke squirt out of the ferryboat’s side. You see, they was firing cannon over the water, trying to make my carcass come to the top.

I was pretty hungry, but it warn’t going to do for me to start a fire, because they might see the smoke. So I set there and watched the cannon-smoke and listened to the boom. The river was a mile wide there, and it always looks pretty on a summer morning—so I was having a good enough time seeing them hunt for my remainders if I only had a bite to eat. Well, then I happened to think how they always put quicksilver in loaves of bread and float them off, because they always go right to the drownded carcass and stop there. So, says I, I’ll keep a lookout, and if any of them’s floating around after me I’ll give them a show. I changed to the Illinois edge of the island to see what luck I could have, and I warn’t disappointed. A big double loaf come along, and I most got it with a long stick, but my foot slipped and she floated out further. Of course I was where the current set in the closest to the shore—I knowed enough for that. But by and by along comes another one, and this time I won. I took out the plug and shook out the little dab of quicksilver, and set my teeth in. It was “baker’s bread”—what the quality eat; none of your low-down corn-pone.

I got a good place amongst the leaves, and set there on a log, munching the bread and watching the ferry-boat, and very well satisfied. And then something struck me. I says, now I reckon the widow or the parson or somebody prayed that this bread would find me, and here it has gone and done it. So there ain’t no doubt but there is something in that thing —that is, there’s something in it when a body like the widow or the parson prays, but it don’t work for me, and I reckon it don’t work for only just the right kind.

I lit a pipe and had a good long smoke, and went on watching. The ferryboat was floating with the current, and I allowed I’d have a chance to see who was aboard when she come along, because she would come in close, where the bread did. When she’d got pretty well along down towards me, I put out my pipe and went to where I fished out the bread,

and laid down behind a log on the bank in a little open place. Where the log forked I could peep through.

By and by she come along, and she drifted in so close that they could a run out a plank and walked ashore. Most everybody was on the boat. Pap, and Judge Thatcher, and Bessie Thatcher, and Jo Harper, and Tom Sawyer, and his old Aunt Polly, and Sid and Mary, and plenty more. Everybody was talking about the murder, but the captain broke in and says:

“Look sharp, now; the current sets in the closest here, and maybe he’s washed ashore and got tangled amongst the brush at the water’s edge. I hope so, anyway.”

“I didn’t hope so. They all crowded up and leaned over the rails, nearly in my face, and kept still, watching with all their might. I could see them first-rate, but they couldn’t see me. Then the captain sung out:

“Stand away!” and the cannon let off such a blast right before me that it made me deef with the noise and pretty near blind with the smoke, and I judged I was gone. If they’d a had some bullets in, I reckon they’d a got the corpse they was after. Well, I see I warn’t hurt, thanks to goodness. The boat floated on and went out of sight around the shoulder of the island. I could hear the booming now and then, further and further off, and by and by, after an hour, I didn’t hear it no more. The island was three mile long. I judged they had got to the foot, and was giving it up. But they didn’t yet a while. They turned around the foot of the island and started up the channel on the Missouri side, under steam, and booming once in a while as they went. I crossed over to that side and watched them. When they got abreast the head of the island they quit shooting and dropped over to the Missouri shore and went home to the town.

I knowed I was all right now. Nobody else would come a-hunting after me. I got my traps out of the canoe and made me a nice camp in the thick woods. I made a kind of a tent out of my blankets to put my things under so the rain couldn’t get at them. I catched a catfish and haggled him open with my saw, and towards sundown I started my camp fire and had supper. Then I set out a line to catch some fish for breakfast.

When it was dark I set by my camp fire smoking, and feeling pretty well satisfied; but by and by it got sort of lonesome, and so I went and

set on the bank and listened to the current swashing along, and counted the stars and drift logs and rafts that come down, and then went to bed; there ain't no better way to put in time when you are lonesome; you can't stay so, you soon get over it.

And so for three days and nights. No difference—just the same thing. But the next day I went exploring around down through the island. I was boss of it; it all belonged to me, so to say, and I wanted to know all about it; but mainly I wanted to put in the time. I found plenty strawberries, ripe and prime; and green summer grapes, and green razberries; and the green blackberries was just beginning to show. They would all come handy by and by, I judged.

Well, I went fooling along in the deep woods till I judged I warn't far from the foot of the island. I had my gun along, but I hadn't shot nothing; it was for protection; thought I would kill some game nigh home. About this time I mighty near stepped on a good-sized snake, and it went sliding off through the grass and flowers, and I after it, trying to get a shot at it. I clipped along, and all of a sudden I bounded right on to the ashes of a camp fire that was still smoking.

My heart jumped up amongst my lungs. I never waited for to look further, but uncocked my gun and went sneaking back on my tiptoes as fast as ever I could. Every now and then I stopped a second amongst the thick leaves and listened, but my breath come so hard I couldn't hear nothing else. I slunk along another piece further, then listened again; and so on, and so on. If I see a stump, I took it for a man; if I trod on a stick and broke it, it made me feel like a person had cut one of my breaths in two and I only got half, and the short half, too.

When I got to camp I warn't feeling very brash, there warn't much sand in my craw; but I says, this ain't no time to be fooling around. So I got all my traps into my canoe again so as to have them out of sight, and I put out the fire and scattered the ashes around to look like an old last year's camp, and then clumb a tree.

I reckon I was up in the tree two hours; but I didn't see nothing, I didn't hear nothing—I only THOUGHT I heard and seen as much as a thousand things. Well, I couldn't stay up there forever; so at last I got

down, but I kept in the thick woods and on the lookout all the time. All I could get to eat was berries and what was left over from breakfast.

By the time it was night I was pretty hungry. So when it was good and dark I slid out from shore before moonrise and paddled over to the Illinois bank—about a quarter of a mile. I went out in the woods and cooked a supper, and I had about made up my mind I would stay there all night when I hear a PLUNKETY-PLUNK, PLUNKETY-PLUNK, and says to myself, horses coming; and next I hear people's voices. I got everything into the canoe as quick as I could, and then went creeping through the woods to see what I could find out. I hadn't got far when I hear a man say:

"We better camp here if we can find a good place; the horses is about beat out. Let's look around."

I didn't wait, but shoved out and paddled away easy. I tied up in the old place, and reckoned I would sleep in the canoe.

I didn't sleep much. I couldn't, somehow, for thinking. And every time I waked up I thought somebody had me by the neck. So the sleep didn't do me no good. By and by I says to myself, I can't live this way; I'm a-going to find out who it is that's here on the island with me; I'll find it out or bust. Well, I felt better right off.

So I took my paddle and slid out from shore just a step or two, and then let the canoe drop along down amongst the shadows. The moon was shining, and outside of the shadows it made it most as light as day. I poked along well on to an hour, everything still as rocks and sound asleep. Well, by this time I was most down to the foot of the island. A little ripply, cool breeze begun to blow, and that was as good as saying the night was about done. I give her a turn with the paddle and brung her nose to shore; then I got my gun and slipped out and into the edge of the woods. I sat down there on a log, and looked out through the leaves. I see the moon go off watch, and the darkness begin to blanket the river. But in a little while I see a pale streak over the treetops, and knowed the day was coming. So I took my gun and slipped off towards where I had run across that camp fire, stopping every minute or two to listen. But I hadn't no luck somehow; I couldn't seem to find the place. But by and by, sure enough, I catched a glimpse of fire away through the trees. I went for it,

cautious and slow. By and by I was close enough to have a look, and there laid a man on the ground. It most give me the fantods. He had a blanket around his head, and his head was nearly in the fire. I set there behind a clump of bushes in about six foot of him, and kept my eyes on him steady. It was getting gray daylight now. Pretty soon he gapped and stretched himself and hove off the blanket, and it was Miss Watson's Jim! I bet I was glad to see him. I says:

"Hello, Jim!" and skipped out.

He bounced up and stared at me wild. Then he drops down on his knees, and puts his hands together and says:

"Doan' hurt me—don't! I hain't ever done no harm to a ghos'. I alwuz liked dead people, en done all I could for 'em. You go en git in de river agin, whah you b'longs, en doan' do nuffn to Ole Jim, 'at 'uz awluz yo' fren'."

Well, I warn't long making him understand I warn't dead. I was ever so glad to see Jim. I warn't lonesome now. I told him I warn't afraid of HIM telling the people where I was. I talked along, but he only set there and looked at me; never said nothing. Then I says:

"It's good daylight. Le's get breakfast. Make up your camp fire good."

"What's de use er makin' up de camp fire to cook strawbries en sich truck? But you got a gun, hain't you? Den we kin git sumfn better den strawbries."

"Strawberries and such truck," I says. "Is that what you live on?"

"I couldn' git nuffn else," he says.

"Why, how long you been on the island, Jim?"

"I come heah de night arter you's killed."

"What, all that time?"

"Yes—indeedy."

"And ain't you had nothing but that kind of rubbage to eat?"

"No, sah—nuffn else."

"Well, you must be most starved, ain't you?"

"I reck'n I could eat a hoss. I think I could. How long you ben on de islan'?"

"Since the night I got killed."

"No! W'y, what has you lived on? But you got a gun. Oh, yes, you got a gun. Dat's good. Now you kill sumfn en I'll make up de fire."

So we went over to where the canoe was, and while he built a fire in a grassy open place amongst the trees, I fetched meal and bacon and coffee, and coffee-pot and frying-pan, and sugar and tin cups, and the nigger was set back considerable, because he reckoned it was all done with witchcraft. I catched a good big catfish, too, and Jim cleaned him with his knife, and fried him.

When breakfast was ready we lolled on the grass and eat it smoking hot. Jim laid it in with all his might, for he was most about starved. Then when we had got pretty well stuffed, we laid off and lazied. By and by Jim says:

"But looky here, Huck, who wuz it dat 'uz killed in dat shanty ef it warn't you?"

Then I told him the whole thing, and he said it was smart. He said Tom Sawyer couldn't get up no better plan than what I had. Then I says:

"How do you come to be here, Jim, and how'd you get here?"

He looked pretty uneasy, and didn't say nothing for a minute. Then he says:

"Maybe I better not tell."

"Why, Jim?"

"Well, dey's reasons. But you wouldn' tell on me ef I uz to tell you, would you, Huck?"

"Blamed if I would, Jim."

"Well, I b'lieve you, Huck. I—I RUN OFF."

"Jim!"

"But mind, you said you wouldn' tell—you know you said you wouldn' tell, Huck."

"Well, I did. I said I wouldn't, and I'll stick to it. Honest INJUN, I will. People would call me a low-down Abolitionist and despise me for keeping mum—but that don't make no difference. I ain't a-going to tell, and I ain't a-going back there, anyways. So, now, le's know all about it."

"Well, you see, it 'uz dis way. Ole missus—dat's Miss Watson—she pecks on me all de time, en treats me pooty rough, but she awluz said she wouldn' sell me down to Orleans. But I noticed dey wuz a nigger trader

roun' de place considable lately, en I begin to git oneasy. Well, one night I creeps to de do' pooty late, en de do' warn't quite shet, en I hear old missus tell de widder she gwyne to sell me down to Orleans, but she didn' want to, but she could git eight hund'd dollars for me, en it 'uz sich a big stack o' money she couldn' resis'. De widder she try to git her to say she wouldn' do it, but I never waited to hear de res'. I lit out mighty quick, I tell you.

"I tuck out en shin down de hill, en 'spec to steal a skift 'long de sho' som'ers 'bove de town, but dey wuz people a-stirring yit, so I hid in de ole tumble-down cooper-shop on de bank to wait for everybody to go 'way. Well, I wuz dah all night. Dey wuz somebody roun' all de time. 'Long 'bout six in de mawnin' skifts begin to go by, en 'bout eight er nine every skift dat went 'long wuz talkin' 'bout how yo' pap come over to de town en say you's killed. Dese las' skifts wuz full o' ladies en genlmen a-goin' over for to see de place. Sometimes dey'd pull up at de sho' en take a res' b'fo' dey started acrost, so by de talk I got to know all 'bout de killin'. I 'uz powerful sorry you's killed, Huck, but I ain't no mo' now.

"I laid dah under de shavin's all day. I 'uz hungry, but I warn't afeard; bekase I knowed ole missus en de widder wuz goin' to start to de camp-meet'n' right arter breakfas' en be gone all day, en dey knows I goes off wid de cattle 'bout daylight, so dey wouldn' 'spec to see me roun' de place, en so dey wouldn' miss me tell arter dark in de evenin'. De yuther servants wouldn' miss me, kase dey'd shin out en take holiday soon as de ole folks 'uz out'n de way.

"Well, when it come dark I tuck out up de river road, en went 'bout two mile er more to whah dey warn't no houses. I'd made up my mine 'bout what I's agwyne to do. You see, ef I kep' on tryin' to git away afoot, de dogs 'ud track me; ef I stole a skift to cross over, dey'd miss dat skift, you see, en dey'd know 'bout whah I'd lan' on de yuther side, en whah to pick up my track. So I says, a raff is what I's arter; it doan' MAKE no track.

"I see a light a-comin' roun' de p'int bymeby, so I wade' in en shove' a log ahead o' me en swum more'n half way acrost de river, en got in 'mongst de drift-wood, en kep' my head down low, en kinder

swum agin de current tell de raff come along. Den I swum to de stern uv it en tuck a-holt. It clouded up en ‘uz pooty dark for a little while. So I clumb up en laid down on de planks. De men ‘uz all ‘way yonder in de middle, whah de lantern wuz. De river wuz a-risin’, en dey wuz a good current; so I reck’n’d ‘at by fo’ in de mawnin’ I’d be twenty-five mile down de river, en den I’d slip in jis b’fo’ daylight en swim asho’, en take to de woods on de Illinois side.

“But I didn’ have no luck. When we ‘uz mos’ down to de head er de islan’ a man begin to come aft wid de lantern, I see it warn’t no use fer to wait, so I slid overboard en struck out fer de islan’. Well, I had a notion I could lan’ mos’ anywhers, but I couldn’t—bank too bluff. I ‘uz mos’ to de foot er de islan’ b’fo’ I found’ a good place. I went into de woods en jedged I wouldn’ fool wid raffs no mo’, long as dey move de lantern roun’ so. I had my pipe en a plug er dog-leg, en some matches in my cap, en dey warn’t wet, so I ‘uz all right.”

“And so you ain’t had no meat nor bread to eat all this time? Why didn’t you get mud-turkles?”

“How you gwyne to git ‘m? You can’t slip up on um en grab um; en how’s a body gwyne to hit um wid a rock? How could a body do it in de night? En I warn’t gwyne to show mysef on de bank in de daytime.”

“Well, that’s so. You’ve had to keep in the woods all the time, of course. Did you hear ‘em shooting the cannon?”

“Oh, yes. I knowed dey was arter you. I see um go by heah—watched um thoo de bushes.”

Some young birds come along, flying a yard or two at a time and lighting. Jim said it was a sign it was going to rain. He said it was a sign when young chickens flew that way, and so he reckoned it was the same way when young birds done it. I was going to catch some of them, but Jim wouldn’t let me. He said it was death. He said his father laid mighty sick once, and some of them catched a bird, and his old granny said his father would die, and he did.

And Jim said you mustn’t count the things you are going to cook for dinner, because that would bring bad luck. The same if you shook the table-cloth after sundown. And he said if a man owned a beehive and that man died, the bees must be told about it before sun-up next morning, or

else the bees would all weaken down and quit work and die. Jim said bees wouldn't sting idiots; but I didn't believe that, because I had tried them lots of times myself, and they wouldn't sting me.

I had heard about some of these things before, but not all of them. Jim knowed all kinds of signs. He said he knowed most everything. I said it looked to me like all the signs was about bad luck, and so I asked him if there warn't any good-luck signs. He says:

"Mighty few—an' DEY ain't no use to a body. What you want to know when good luck's a-comin' for? Want to keep it off?" And he said: "Ef you's got hairy arms en a hairy breas', it's a sign dat you's agwyne to be rich. Well, dey's some use in a sign like dat, 'kase it's so fur ahead. You see, maybe you's got to be po' a long time fust, en so you might git discourage' en kill yo'sef 'f you didn' know by de sign dat you gwyne to be rich bymeby."

"Have you got hairy arms and a hairy breast, Jim?"

"What's de use to ax dat question? Don't you see I has?"

"Well, are you rich?"

"No, but I ben rich wunst, and gwyne to be rich agin. Wunst I had foteen dollars, but I tuck to specalat'n', en got busted out."

"What did you speculate in, Jim?"

"Well, fust I tackled stock."

"What kind of stock?"

"Why, live stock—cattle, you know. I put ten dollars in a cow. But I ain' gwyne to resk no mo' money in stock. De cow up 'n' died on my han's."

"So you lost the ten dollars."

"No, I didn't lose it all. I on'y los' 'bout nine of it. I sole de hide en taller for a dollar en ten cents."

"You had five dollars and ten cents left. Did you speculate any more?"

"Yes. You know that one-laigged nigger dat b'longs to old Misto Bradish? Well, he sot up a bank, en say anybody dat put in a dollar would git fo' dollars mo' at de en' er de year. Well, all de niggers went in, but dey didn't have much. I wuz de on'y one dat had much. So I stuck out for mo' dan fo' dollars, en I said 'f I didn' git it I'd start a bank

mysef. Well, o' course dat nigger want' to keep me out er de business, bekase he says dey warn't business 'nough for two banks, so he say I could put in my five dollars en he pay me thirty-five at de en' er de year.

"So I done it. Den I reck'n'd I'd inves' de thirty-five dollars right off en keep things a-movin'. Dey wuz a nigger name' Bob, dat had ketched a wood-flat, en his marster didn' know it; en I bought it off'n him en told him to take de thirty-five dollars when de en' er de year come; but somebody stole de wood-flat dat night, en nex day de one-laigged nigger say de bank's busted. So dey didn' none uv us git no money."

"What did you do with the ten cents, Jim?"

"Well, I 'uz gwyne to spen' it, but I had a dream, en de dream tole me to give it to a nigger name' Balum—Balum's Ass dey call him for short; he's one er dem chuckleheads, you know. But he's lucky, dey say, en I see I warn't lucky. De dream say let Balum inves' de ten cents en he'd make a raise for me. Well, Balum he tuck de money, en when he wuz in church he hear de preacher say dat whoever give to de po' len' to de Lord, en boun' to git his money back a hund'd times. So Balum he tuck en give de ten cents to de po', en laid low to see what wuz gwyne to come of it."

"Well, what did come of it, Jim?"

"Nuffn never come of it. I couldn' manage to k'leck dat money no way; en Balum he couldn'. I ain' gwyne to len' no mo' money 'dout I see de security. Boun' to git yo' money back a hund'd times, de preacher says! Ef I could git de ten CENTS back, I'd call it squah, en be glad er de chanst."

"Well, it's all right anyway, Jim, long as you're going to be rich again some time or other."

"Yes; en I's rich now, come to look at it. I owns mysef, en I's wuth eight hund'd dollars. I wisht I had de money, I wouldn' want no mo'."

Chapter IX

I WANTED to go and look at a place right about the middle of the island that I'd found when I was exploring; so we started and soon got to it,

because the island was only three miles long and a quarter of a mile wide.

This place was a tolerable long, steep hill or ridge about forty foot high. We had a rough time getting to the top, the sides was so steep and the bushes so thick. We tramped and clumb around all over it, and by and by found a good big cavern in the rock, most up to the top on the side towards Illinois. The cavern was as big as two or three rooms bunched together, and Jim could stand up straight in it. It was cool in there. Jim was for putting our traps in there right away, but I said we didn't want to be climbing up and down there all the time.

Jim said if we had the canoe hid in a good place, and had all the traps in the cavern, we could rush there if anybody was to come to the island, and they would never find us without dogs. And, besides, he said them little birds had said it was going to rain, and did I want the things to get wet?

So we went back and got the canoe, and paddled up abreast the cavern, and lugged all the traps up there. Then we hunted up a place close by to hide the canoe in, amongst the thick willows. We took some fish off of the lines and set them again, and begun to get ready for dinner.

The door of the cavern was big enough to roll a hogshead in, and on one side of the door the floor stuck out a little bit, and was flat and a good place to build a fire on. So we built it there and cooked dinner.

We spread the blankets inside for a carpet, and eat our dinner in there. We put all the other things handy at the back of the cavern. Pretty soon it darkened up, and begun to thunder and lighten; so the birds was right about it. Directly it begun to rain, and it rained like all fury, too, and I never see the wind blow so. It was one of these regular summer storms. It would get so dark that it looked all blue-black outside, and lovely; and the rain would thrash along by so thick that the trees off a little ways looked dim and spider-webby; and here would come a blast of wind that would bend the trees down and turn up the pale underside of the leaves; and then a perfect ripper of a gust would follow along and set the branches to tossing their arms as if they was just wild; and next, when it was just about the bluest and blackest—FST! it was as bright as glory, and you'd have a little glimpse of tree-tops a-plunging about away off

yonder in the storm, hundreds of yards further than you could see before; dark as sin again in a second, and now you'd hear the thunder let go with an awful crash, and then go rumbling, grumbling, tumbling, down the sky towards the under side of the world, like rolling empty barrels down stairs—where it's long stairs and they bounce a good deal, you know.

"Jim, this is nice," I says. "I wouldn't want to be nowhere else but here. Pass me along another hunk of fish and some hot corn-bread."

"Well, you wouldn't a ben here 'f it hadn't a ben for Jim. You'd a ben down dah in de woods widout any dinner, en gittn' mos' drownded, too; dat you would, honey. Chickens knows when it's gwyne to rain, en so do de birds, chile."

The river went on raising and raising for ten or twelve days, till at last it was over the banks. The water was three or four foot deep on the island in the low places and on the Illinois bottom. On that side it was a good many miles wide, but on the Missouri side it was the same old distance across—a half a mile—because the Missouri shore was just a wall of high bluffs.

Daytimes we paddled all over the island in the canoe, It was mighty cool and shady in the deep woods, even if the sun was blazing outside. We went winding in and out amongst the trees, and sometimes the vines hung so thick we had to back away and go some other way. Well, on every old broken-down tree you could see rabbits and snakes and such things; and when the island had been overflowed a day or two they got so tame, on account of being hungry, that you could paddle right up and put your hand on them if you wanted to; but not the snakes and turtles—they would slide off in the water. The ridge our cavern was in was full of them. We could a had pets enough if we'd wanted them.

One night we catched a little section of a lumber raft—nice pine planks. It was twelve foot wide and about fifteen or sixteen foot long, and the top stood above water six or seven inches—a solid, level floor. We could see saw-logs go by in the daylight sometimes, but we let them go; we didn't show ourselves in daylight.

Another night when we was up at the head of the island, just before daylight, here comes a frame-house down, on the west side. She was a two-story, and tilted over considerable. We paddled out and got aboard

—clumb in at an upstairs window. But it was too dark to see yet, so we made the canoe fast and set in her to wait for daylight.

The light begun to come before we got to the foot of the island. Then we looked in at the window. We could make out a bed, and a table, and two old chairs, and lots of things around about on the floor, and there was clothes hanging against the wall. There was something laying on the floor in the far corner that looked like a man. So Jim says:

"Hello, you!"

But it didn't budge. So I hollered again, and then Jim says:

"De man ain't asleep—he's dead. You hold still—I'll go en see."

He went, and bent down and looked, and says:

"It's a dead man. Yes, indeedy; naked, too. He's ben shot in de back. I reck'n he's ben dead two er three days. Come in, Huck, but doan' look at his face—it's too gashly."

I didn't look at him at all. Jim throwed some old rags over him, but he needn't done it; I didn't want to see him. There was heaps of old greasy cards scattered around over the floor, and old whisky bottles, and a couple of masks made out of black cloth; and all over the walls was the ignorantest kind of words and pictures made with charcoal. There was two old dirty calico dresses, and a sun-bonnet, and some women's underclothes hanging against the wall, and some men's clothing, too. We put the lot into the canoe—it might come good. There was a boy's old speckled straw hat on the floor; I took that, too. And there was a bottle that had had milk in it, and it had a rag stopper for a baby to suck. We would a took the bottle, but it was broke. There was a seedy old chest, and an old hair trunk with the hinges broke. They stood open, but there warn't nothing left in them that was any account. The way things was scattered about we reckoned the people left in a hurry, and warn't fixed so as to carry off most of their stuff.

We got an old tin lantern, and a butcher-knife without any handle, and a bran-new Barlow knife worth two bits in any store, and a lot of tallow candles, and a tin candlestick, and a gourd, and a tin cup, and a ratty old bedquilt off the bed, and a reticule with needles and pins and beeswax and buttons and thread and all such truck in it, and a hatchet and some nails, and a fishline as thick as my little finger with some

monstrous hooks on it, and a roll of buckskin, and a leather dog-collar, and a horseshoe, and some vials of medicine that didn't have no label on them; and just as we was leaving I found a tolerable good curry-comb, and Jim he found a ratty old fiddle-bow, and a wooden leg. The straps was broke off of it, but, barring that, it was a good enough leg, though it was too long for me and not long enough for Jim, and we couldn't find the other one, though we hunted all around.

And so, take it all around, we made a good haul. When we was ready to shove off we was a quarter of a mile below the island, and it was pretty broad day; so I made Jim lay down in the canoe and cover up with the quilt, because if he set up people could tell he was a nigger a good ways off. I paddled over to the Illinois shore, and drifted down most a half a mile doing it. I crept up the dead water under the bank, and hadn't no accidents and didn't see nobody. We got home all safe.

Chapter X

AFTER breakfast I wanted to talk about the dead man and guess out how he come to be killed, but Jim didn't want to. He said it would fetch bad luck; and besides, he said, he might come and ha'nt us; he said a man that warn't buried was more likely to go a-ha'nting around than one that was planted and comfortable. That sounded pretty reasonable, so I didn't say no more; but I couldn't keep from studying over it and wishing I knowed who shot the man, and what they done it for.

We rummaged the clothes we'd got, and found eight dollars in silver sewed up in the lining of an old blanket overcoat. Jim said he reckoned the people in that house stole the coat, because if they'd a knowed the money was there they wouldn't a left it. I said I reckoned they killed him, too; but Jim didn't want to talk about that. I says:

"Now you think it's bad luck; but what did you say when I fetched in the snake-skin that I found on the top of the ridge day before yesterday? You said it was the worst bad luck in the world to touch a snake-skin with my hands. Well, here's your bad luck! We've raked in all this truck and eight dollars besides. I wish we could have some bad luck like this every day, Jim."

"Never you mind, honey, never you mind. Don't you git too peart. It's a-comin'. Mind I tell you, it's a-comin'."

It did come, too. It was a Tuesday that we had that talk. Well, after dinner Friday we was laying around in the grass at the upper end of the ridge, and got out of tobacco. I went to the cavern to get some, and found a rattlesnake in there. I killed him, and curled him up on the foot of Jim's blanket, ever so natural, thinking there'd be some fun when Jim found him there. Well, by night I forgot all about the snake, and when Jim flung himself down on the blanket while I struck a light the snake's mate was there, and bit him.

He jumped up yelling, and the first thing the light showed was the varmint curled up and ready for another spring. I laid him out in a second with a stick, and Jim grabbed pap's whisky-jug and begun to pour it down.

He was barefooted, and the snake bit him right on the heel. That all comes of my being such a fool as to not remember that wherever you leave a dead snake its mate always comes there and curls around it. Jim told me to chop off the snake's head and throw it away, and then skin the body and roast a piece of it. I done it, and he eat it and said it would help cure him. He made me take off the rattles and tie them around his wrist, too. He said that that would help. Then I slid out quiet and throwed the snakes clear away amongst the bushes; for I warn't going to let Jim find out it was all my fault, not if I could help it.

Jim sucked and sucked at the jug, and now and then he got out of his head and pitched around and yelled; but every time he come to himself he went to sucking at the jug again. His foot swelled up pretty big, and so did his leg; but by and by the drunk begun to come, and so I judged he was all right; but I'd druther been bit with a snake than pap's whisky.

Jim was laid up for four days and nights. Then the swelling was all gone and he was around again. I made up my mind I wouldn't ever take a-holt of a snake-skin again with my hands, now that I see what had come of it. Jim said he reckoned I would believe him next time. And he said that handling a snake-skin was such awful bad luck that maybe we hadn't got to the end of it yet. He said he druther see the new moon over his left shoulder as much as a thousand times than take up a snake-skin in

his hand. Well, I was getting to feel that way myself, though I've always reckoned that looking at the new moon over your left shoulder is one of the carelessest and foolishest things a body can do. Old Hank Bunker done it once, and bragged about it; and in less than two years he got drunk and fell off of the shot-tower, and spread himself out so that he was just a kind of a layer, as you may say; and they slid him edgeways between two barn doors for a coffin, and buried him so, so they say, but I didn't see it. Pap told me. But anyway it all come of looking at the moon that way, like a fool.

Well, the days went along, and the river went down between its banks again; and about the first thing we done was to bait one of the big hooks with a skinned rabbit and set it and catch a catfish that was as big as a man, being six foot two inches long, and weighed over two hundred pounds. We couldn't handle him, of course; he would a flung us into Illinois. We just set there and watched him rip and tear around till he drownded. We found a brass button in his stomach and a round ball, and lots of rubbage. We split the ball open with the hatchet, and there was a spool in it. Jim said he'd had it there a long time, to coat it over so and make a ball of it. It was as big a fish as was ever catched in the Mississippi, I reckon. Jim said he hadn't ever seen a bigger one. He would a been worth a good deal over at the village. They peddle out such a fish as that by the pound in the market-house there; everybody buys some of him; his meat's as white as snow and makes a good fry.

Next morning I said it was getting slow and dull, and I wanted to get a stirring up some way. I said I reckoned I would slip over the river and find out what was going on. Jim liked that notion; but he said I must go in the dark and look sharp. Then he studied it over and said, couldn't I put on some of them old things and dress up like a girl? That was a good notion, too. So we shortened up one of the calico gowns, and I turned up my trouser-legs to my knees and got into it. Jim hitched it behind with the hooks, and it was a fair fit. I put on the sun-bonnet and tied it under my chin, and then for a body to look in and see my face was like looking down a joint of stove-pipe. Jim said nobody would know me, even in the daytime, hardly. I practiced around all day to get the hang of the things, and by and by I could do pretty well in them, only Jim said I didn't walk

like a girl; and he said I must quit pulling up my gown to get at my britches-pocket. I took notice, and done better.

I started up the Illinois shore in the canoe just after dark.

I started across to the town from a little below the ferry-landing, and the drift of the current fetched me in at the bottom of the town. I tied up and started along the bank. There was a light burning in a little shanty that hadn't been lived in for a long time, and I wondered who had took up quarters there. I slipped up and peeped in at the window. There was a woman about forty year old in there knitting by a candle that was on a pine table. I didn't know her face; she was a stranger, for you couldn't start a face in that town that I didn't know. Now this was lucky, because I was weakening; I was getting afraid I had come; people might know my voice and find me out. But if this woman had been in such a little town two days she could tell me all I wanted to know; so I knocked at the door, and made up my mind I wouldn't forget I was a girl.

Chapter XI

"COME in," says the woman, and I did. She says: "Take a cheer."

I done it. She looked me all over with her little shiny eyes, and says:

"What might your name be?"

"Sarah Williams."

"Where 'bouts do you live? In this neighborhood?'

"No'm. In Hookerville, seven mile below. I've walked all the way and I'm all tired out."

"Hungry, too, I reckon. I'll find you something."

"No'm, I ain't hungry. I was so hungry I had to stop two miles below here at a farm; so I ain't hungry no more. It's what makes me so late. My mother's down sick, and out of money and everything, and I come to tell my uncle Abner Moore. He lives at the upper end of the town, she says. I hain't ever been here before. Do you know him?"

"No; but I don't know everybody yet. I haven't lived here quite two weeks. It's a considerable ways to the upper end of the town. You better stay here all night. Take off your bonnet."

“No,” I says; “I’ll rest a while, I reckon, and go on. I ain’t afeared of the dark.”

She said she wouldn’t let me go by myself, but her husband would be in by and by, maybe in a hour and a half, and she’d send him along with me. Then she got to talking about her husband, and about her relations up the river, and her relations down the river, and about how much better off they used to was, and how they didn’t know but they’d made a mistake coming to our town, instead of letting well alone—and so on and so on, till I was afeard I had made a mistake coming to her to find out what was going on in the town; but by and by she dropped on to pap and the murder, and then I was pretty willing to let her clatter right along. She told about me and Tom Sawyer finding the six thousand dollars (only she got it ten) and all about pap and what a hard lot he was, and what a hard lot I was, and at last she got down to where I was murdered. I says:

“Who done it? We’ve heard considerable about these goings on down in Hookerville, but we don’t know who ‘twas that killed Huck Finn.”

“Well, I reckon there’s a right smart chance of people HERE that’d like to know who killed him. Some think old Finn done it himself.”

“No—is that so?”

“Most everybody thought it at first. He’ll never know how nigh he come to getting lynched. But before night they changed around and judged it was done by a runaway nigger named Jim.”

“Why HE—”

I stopped. I reckoned I better keep still. She run on, and never noticed I had put in at all:

“The nigger run off the very night Huck Finn was killed. So there’s a reward out for him—three hundred dollars. And there’s a reward out for old Finn, too—two hundred dollars. You see, he come to town the morning after the murder, and told about it, and was out with ‘em on the ferryboat hunt, and right away after he up and left. Before night they wanted to lynch him, but he was gone, you see. Well, next day they found out the nigger was gone; they found out he hadn’t ben seen sence ten o’clock the night the murder was done. So then they put it on him,

you see; and while they was full of it, next day, back comes old Finn, and went boo-hooing to Judge Thatcher to get money to hunt for the nigger all over Illinois with. The judge gave him some, and that evening he got drunk, and was around till after midnight with a couple of mighty hard-looking strangers, and then went off with them. Well, he hain't come back sence, and they ain't looking for him back till this thing blows over a little, for people thinks now that he killed his boy and fixed things so folks would think robbers done it, and then he'd get Huck's money without having to bother a long time with a lawsuit. People do say he warn't any too good to do it. Oh, he's sly, I reckon. If he don't come back for a year he'll be all right. You can't prove anything on him, you know; everything will be quieted down then, and he'll walk in Huck's money as easy as nothing."

"Yes, I reckon so, 'm. I don't see nothing in the way of it. Has everybody quit thinking the nigger done it?"

"Oh, no, not everybody. A good many thinks he done it. But they'll get the nigger pretty soon now, and maybe they can scare it out of him."

"Why, are they after him yet?"

"Well, you're innocent, ain't you! Does three hundred dollars lay around every day for people to pick up? Some folks think the nigger ain't far from here. I'm one of them—but I hain't talked it around. A few days ago I was talking with an old couple that lives next door in the log shanty, and they happened to say hardly anybody ever goes to that island over yonder that they call Jackson's Island. Don't anybody live there? says I. No, nobody, says they. I didn't say any more, but I done some thinking. I was pretty near certain I'd seen smoke over there, about the head of the island, a day or two before that, so I says to myself, like as not that nigger's hiding over there; anyway, says I, it's worth the trouble to give the place a hunt. I hain't seen any smoke sence, so I reckon maybe he's gone, if it was him; but husband's going over to see —him and another man. He was gone up the river; but he got back to-day, and I told him as soon as he got here two hours ago."

I had got so uneasy I couldn't set still. I had to do something with my hands; so I took up a needle off of the table and went to threading it. My hands shook, and I was making a bad job of it. When the woman stopped

说话我抬起头，她是在看我漂亮的好奇的微笑和
一点。 我放下针和线,和我们在感兴趣—
我也是—并说：

"三百美元是力量的金钱。 我希望我的母亲可以
得到它。 是你丈夫去过那里-晚上？ "

"哦，是的。 他去了-镇的男人我告诉你的，让
一艘船看看他们是否能借用另一把枪。 他们会在之后的
午夜。"

"不他们看到更好的如果他们是要等到白天?"

"是的。 并且不可能的黑鬼看看好吗? 午夜之后他就会
可能是睡着了，他们可以滑周围的树林和追捕
他的营火的所有更好的黑暗，如果他得到了一个"。

"我没有想到这一点。"

女人一直看着我非常好奇，我没有感觉到一点
舒适。 很快，她说"

"你说什么你的名字是的，亲爱的？ "

"M—玛丽*威廉姆斯。"

不知怎的，它似乎没有我，我说，这是玛利亚之前，因此我
没有看起来似乎对我我说，这是莎拉，所以我觉得排序的
垄断，而是afeared也许我一直在寻找这一点。 我希望
女人会说更多的东西；再她仍然设置的uneasier我
是。 但现在她说：

"亲爱的，我以为你说这是莎拉*当你第一次来吗？ "

"哦，是的我，我没有。 莎拉*玛丽*威廉姆斯。 莎拉是我的第一名。
一些叫我莎拉，有些叫我玛丽。"

"哦，那是办法吗？ "

"是的我是."

我感觉更好，那么，但是我希望我出去的那里，无论如何。 我
不你看起来呢。

嗯，女人下降到谈论多么艰难时期，以及如何
贫困，他们不得不生活，以及如何老鼠是免费的，因为如果他们拥有的
地方，等等，然后，我就容易了。 她是对
关于老鼠。 你会看到一个坚持他的鼻子出了一个洞在角落里
每小时。 她说她已经拥有的东西方便扔在他们
当她独自一人，或者他们不会给她的没有和平。 她给我看

酒吧的导致扭成的结，并说她是一个很好的拍摄它
generly，但她挣脱了她的手臂一天或两天前，并不知道
她是否可能引发真正的现在。 但她看了一个机会，并
直接撞在一个老鼠，但她错过了他广泛的，并说"哎哟！"
它伤害了她的手臂。 然后她告诉我要尝试下一个。 我想
离开之前，老人得到了回，但是当然我没有让。 我
得到的东西，和第一个老鼠，显示了他的鼻子让我驱动，并且如果他
有留他在那里他会一直是一个可容忍的生病的老鼠。 她说这是
第一-率，以及她认为我会蜂巢的下一个。 她去并得到
一次性的领导和取回来，带着汉克纱
，她想我帮她。 我举起了我的双手和她
把汉克过他们，并继续谈论她和她丈夫的
事项。 但她断说:

"让你的眼睛在大鼠。 你最好有该导致在你的腿上，
方便。"

所以她丢下一次进入我的圈就在那一刻，我
鼓掌我的脚一起在这和她说话。 但只有大约一
分钟。 然后，她摘下了汉克，看着我的脸，
并非常愉快，并说：

"来吧，现在，什么是你的真名吗?"

"什么，妈妈？"

"什么是你的真名吗? 这是账单，或者汤姆，或者鲍勃？—或者它是什么？"

我觉得我震撼像一片叶子，我不知道几乎没有什么要做。 但
我说：

"请不要取笑一个可怜的女孩喜欢我，妈妈。 如果我在的
方法在这里，我会—"

"不，你不会。 设置下来，你在哪里。 我不会
伤害你，我是不是要告诉你，nuther. 你只要告诉我你的
秘密，并且相信我。 我会保持它；而且，更重要的是，我会帮助你。 所以会我的
老人，如果你想要他。 你看，你是一个失控的'prentice,那是
全部。 这不是什么。 没有没有伤害它. 你已经处理不好，
你做了你的心削减。 祝福你，孩子，我不会告诉
你。 告诉我所有关于它现在，这是一个很好的男孩"。

所以我说，这不会没有使用，以尽量发挥它的任何更长时间，和我
只是做一个干净的乳房并且告诉她一切，但她不能去

背上她的承诺。 然后我告诉她我的父亲和母亲死亡，
法律不得不开我出去到一个旧的农民在该国三十英里，
离河流，和他对我这么坏的我不能忍受没有
长；他走了走了两天，所以我拿了我的
机会，并偷走了一些他女儿的旧衣服和清除出去，我
已经三个晚上来到第三十英里。 我走了晚上，躲在
白天睡觉，并包的面包和肉我进行从家里
持续了我所有的方式，我有一个-很多。 我说我认为我的叔叔
阿尔伯特*摩尔会照顾我所以这就是为什么我袭击了
这个城镇的歌珊.

"高盛的，孩子? 这不是歌珊. 这是圣彼得堡。 高盛的
十英里的河流。 谁告诉你这是歌珊?"

"为什么,一个男人，我会在黎明的到今天上午，就在我要
打开进入树林为我的正常的睡眠。 他告诉我时候的道路
的叉我必须采取正确的一方面，和五英里能帮我拿到
歌珊."

"他是喝醉了，我估计。 他告诉你的只是完全错误的。"

"嗯，他没有像他喝醉了，但它不是没有问题了。 我
被移动的。 我会取歌珊之前在白天。"

"等一分钟。 我会把你小吃吃。 你可能会想
它的。"

所以她让我一点心，并说：

"你说，当一头牛躺下来，她得到了第一个?
回答了提示，现在不停的研究。 这最终得到了
第一个? "

"后端，妈妈。"

"好吧，那么，一匹马? "

"为'rard端，妈妈。"

"哪一边的树不会的苔藓的生长? "

"北侧。"

"如果十五牛是浏览一个山坡上，有多少人吃
他们的头指向同一方向?"

"整个十五，妈妈。"

"嗯，我觉得你住在该国。 我想也许
你是想骗人我了。 什么你的真实姓名，现在? "

"乔治*彼得，妈妈。"

"好吧，试着去记住这，乔治。 不要忘记告诉我这是Elexander在你走之前，然后说这是乔治*Elexander当我抓到你。 并且不要去约中的妇女，老的印花布。 你一个女孩可以容忍的贫穷，但是你可能会欺骗人，也许。保佑你,孩子,当你穿针没有线仍然和获取针；保持针仍然捅线；这是一个女人数总是这样，但一个男人总是做t'other的方式。 当你扔在一个老鼠或任何东西，顺利自己一手蹑脚把你的手在你的头作为尴尬的，你可以，和近你的鼠约六七英尺。 扔硬的武装从肩膀，就像有一个枢轴有它打开，像个女孩；不从腕部和肘，用你的手臂，推到一边，就像一个男孩。而且，你要知道，当一个女孩试图抓住任何东西在她腿上她把她的膝盖开的；她不会鼓掌他们一起,你没有当你逮住的一次性领导。 为什么，我发现你为一个男孩的时候你是穿针；和我做作的其他东西只是为了让某些。 现在跑到你的叔叔，莎拉*玛丽*威廉姆斯*乔治*Elexander Peters,如果你遇到麻烦你送字夫人朱迪思*洛，这是我，我会做什么，我可以让你出来的。把河水道所有的方式，并在下一次你的流浪汉把鞋和袜子。 河道路的一个多岩石的一个，你的脚会在一个情况的时候你到戈申，我估计。"

我去了银行有关五十码，然后我加倍了上我的轨道和下滑回到我的独木舟是一个很好的片下面的房子。我跳上，在匆忙。 我去流远远不足以使岛上的头，然后开始。 我把太阳帽子，为我不想没有眼罩上。 当我还是关于中间我听到钟开始罢工，使我停止和监听的声音来微弱的水上，但是明确的。 当我敲击头岛上我从来没有等待的打击，尽管我是最篇大论，但我猛入木材在我古老的营地，并开始了一个良好的开火，有一个高和干点。

然后我跳上独木舟，并挖出我们的地方，一英里一半以下，很难，因为我可以走了。 我降落，那放了一会的

木材和脊和进入洞穴。 还有吉姆规定，声音睡
在地上。 我激起了他，说：

"混帐和驼背自己，吉姆！ 有没有一分钟的损失。
他们在追我们！"

吉姆从来不问任何问题，他从来不说一个词，但他
的工作对下一个半小时表明关于如何，他很害怕。 由
于时间的一切我们已经在这个世界是在我们的筏子,而她正
准备要推从柳湾她在哪里躲藏起来。 我们把
出营地的火灾在洞穴的第一件事情，并没有蜡烛
之外。

我把独木舟从岸边的一个小小的一块，看了，但
如果有一个船身边我无法看到它，星和阴影不
好看。 然后我们下了木筏和下滑沿着在
树荫下，过去的脚岛上死亡仍然从来没有说一句话。

第十二章

它必须接近向一点钟的时候，我们有以下的小岛在
最后一次了，木筏没有似乎去大缓慢。 如果一条船是来
我们是要独木舟，并打破对伊利诺斯州海岸；它
是一艘船没有来，因为我们没有没有想过来把枪放在
独木舟，或者一个钓鱼线，或者任何东西吃。 我们是在品质太
多的汗水想到这么多的事情。 它警告不良好的判断力要
把一切都在木筏。

如果男人去的岛屿我只是希望他们找到营火我
建，并观看了所有的夜晚为吉姆要来。 不管怎么说，他们
离开我们，如果我建筑物的火永远不会上当他们警告没有
故障的地雷。 我发挥了它作为低下来他们作为我可以。

当第一条的天开始显示出我们绑起来一个towhead
在一个大弯的伊利诺伊州的边和砍掉杨树枝
与斧头，并掩盖了木筏与他们所以她看起来像
还有了一个山洞里-在银行。 一个拖车头是一个沙洲，
有白杨对它的厚哈罗-牙齿。

我们有山在密苏里州海岸和沉重的木材上
伊利诺伊州的边和道是密苏里海岸在那个地方，

所以我们警告不惧怕任何人跑过我们。 我们躺在那里一整天，
看着木筏和汽船旋下密苏里州海岸
上轮船打击大的河流的中间。 我告诉吉姆的所有有关
的时间我都叽叽喳喳那个女人；Jim说她是个聪明的
一种，如果她开始后的我们自己她会不会设置下来
看一个营火—没有，先生，她想获取一个的狗。 好吧，那么，我说，你为什么
不告诉她她丈夫取的狗吗？ 吉姆说他打赌她有没有想
它的时候，男人是准备好开始，他认为，他们必须
走了-镇，以得到一条狗，并使他们失去了所有的时间，否则我们
不会在这里上towhead十六或十七英里下面的
村庄—不，真的，我们将在这同样的老城区。 所以我说
我不在乎什么原因是他们没有得到我们，只要他们
没有。

当它开始以来在黑暗中我们戳到我们头上出来
的杨木丛中，并且看向上和向下和横；没有在
视线；因此，吉姆了一些顶尖的木筏和建造一个舒适的
窝棚下获得在炽热的天气和雨和保持的东西
干的。 吉姆做的一个楼层的窝棚，并提出它的一只脚或多个上述
水平的筏子，因此现在的毯子和所有的陷阱，被推
到汽船波。 右在中间的窝棚我们做了一个
层的污约五到六英寸深的框架周围，以
保持其位置；这是建立一个火在马虎的天气寒冷;
窝棚将保持它被看到。 我们做了一个额外的转向-
桨，也因为一个人可能会打破了在一个障碍或
东西。 我们固定一个简短的分叉棍挂旧的灯，
因为我们必须永远光灯当我们看到一个汽船
上下来-流，以保持得到运行；但是，我们不会
有光它为上游艇，除非我们看到，我们是在什么他们
叫一个"隧道"；对于这条河是很高尚，非常低的银行
仍然是一个有点下水； 所以上的船只始终没有运行的
通道，但是猎杀易水。

这第二个夜晚我们之间运行的七和八个小时，与
当前，做出过四英里一小时。 我们逮住鱼和
谈，和我们游泳，然后现在要继续关闭嗜睡。 这是
一种严肃的，漂流下来的大河，铺设在我们的背上

看着星星，我们没有没有觉得大声说话，它警告不是经常说我们笑了—只有一点点的样的一个低微笑。 我们有强大的好天气作为一个普通的事情，并没有发生过我们的—那天晚上，也没有下一个，也不是下一个。

每天晚上我们经过的城镇，他们中的一些走在黑山坡，没有什么但是只要一个闪亮的床灯；不是房子你可以看到。 第五晚上，我们通过了圣路易斯，这就像整个世界亮了起来。 在圣彼得堡他们说那里是二三十万人在圣路易斯，但是我从来不相信它，直到我看到的那个美妙的散布的灯光在两点钟方向，仍然的夜晚。 有警告不一的声音；所有人都睡着了。

每天晚上我现在用来滑岸朝着十点钟在一些小村庄，以及买的十或十五美分的价值的膳食或培根或者其他的东西吃；以及有时候，我举起一只鸡，警告不栖息舒适，并把他带。 Pap总是说，把一只鸡当你得到一个机会，因为如果你不想让他自己可以很容易找到别人，一个良好的契约是不是曾经忘记了。 我从来没有看到巴氏时他不想要鸡自己，但是他用来说，无论如何。

早晨日光之前我陷入玉米地和借用一个西瓜，或mushmelon，或爱尔啤，或一些新的玉米，或者东西。 Pap总是说它的警告没有伤害借用的东西如果你是想付钱给他们一些时间；但是寡妇说，它警告不任何东西，但软的名称盗窃，没有像样的身体会这样做。吉姆说，他认为寡妇是部分正确和pap部分是正确的；所以最好的方式将对我们挑选出两个或三个东西的列表，并说，我们不会借他们的任何更多的—然后他认为这不能不损害为借用其他人。 所以我们谈过的所有一天晚上，漂流沿着河流，试图使我们的头脑是否下降的西瓜，或cantelopes，或mushmelons，或者是什么。 但对白天我们得到了它的所有定居令人满意，并得出结论，以降crabapples和p'simmons. 我们警告不感觉正好在那之前，但它是所有舒适了。 我很高兴它的方式出来，也因为crabapples不是以往任何时候都好，并且p'simmons不会成为两个月或三个月。

我们射杀了一个水鸟，然后现在，有太早，在
上午或没有早点睡够在晚上。 把它所有的
轮，我们生活很高。

第五晚下圣路易斯我们有一个很大的风暴之后的午夜，
有个电源的电闪雷鸣和雨倾倒在一个
固片。 我们住在棚屋和我们的筏子自己照顾自己。
当闪电瞪着我们可以看到一个大的直接河的未来，
并高，石峭壁两侧。 通过并由我说，"你好，吉姆，
看看那边！" 这是汽船，杀死了自己的一块岩石上。 我们
是直漂流下来给她。 闪电显示，她非常
不同的。 她靠过来，带她上甲板以上的水，
你可以看到每小chimbly人清洁和清晰，主席
通过大贝尔，用旧的没精打采的帽子挂在它的背面，当
闪烁。

嗯，这是在晚上和暴风雨，所有这么神秘-
喜欢，我觉得只是该办法的任何其他男孩会有感觉的时候我看到那个残骸
奠定有这么悲哀和孤单中间的河流。 我
想回到船上她和悄悄一点，并看到什么就有什么
在那里。 所以我说：

"Le的土地上她的，吉姆。"

但吉姆已经死了针对它在第一次。 他说：

"我doan'想去的傻瓜'n'长er没有毁坏. 我们是干什么的怪的
好吧，我们最好让怪'以及孤独，作为德好书说。 如
不dey的警卫dat毁坏."

"守望你祖母的，"我说，"没有什么可以看的
但是德克萨斯州和试点的房子，你认为有人会来
resk他的生活，为一个德克萨斯州的一个试点的房子这样的夜晚如此，当它
有可能破坏和洗掉下河的任何分钟？" 吉姆没
有说什么，所以他没有尝试。 "此外，"我说，"我们可能会
借用的东西值得拥有的船长的客舱. Seegars，我
打赌你和成本的五分元，固现金。 轮船的船长是
总是丰富的，并得到大会第六十美元一个月，他们不关心一%
什么事费用，你知道，只要他们想要它。 坚持一支蜡烛在你的
口袋里；我不能休息，吉姆，直到我们给她一个翻找. 你觉得
汤姆会去通过这个事情吗？ 不对派，他不会的。 他会

这叫一个冒险—这是什么他会打电话；而他们的土地上，破坏，如果这是他最后的行动。 并不是他扔的风格吗？ —不，他传播自己，也没有什么? 为什么你会认为这是克里斯托弗* C'lumbus发现合王国。 我祝愿汤姆*索亚在这里。"

吉姆，他抱怨一点，但是得到。 他说我们不能谈论任何比我们更能帮助，然后帮你强大的低。 闪电般向我们展示了破坏再次正是时候，和我们获取的stabboard 井架，并作出快速有。

甲板很高，在这里。 我们就偷偷地走下坡为它对labboard，在黑暗，走向得克萨斯州，感觉我们的方式缓慢的，与我们的脚,和扩展我们手中出来抵御这些家伙，因为它是如此黑暗中，我们看不到有任何迹象。 很快我们的进端的天窗，clumb上；并且在下一个步骤取我们以前的队长的门，这是开放的，并通过Jimminy，下通过的德克萨斯州-大厅里，我们看到一个光！ 和所有在同第二，我们似乎听到低声音在那边！

吉姆*低声说他的感觉强大的病人，并告诉我来着。 我说，所有的权利，并且要开始对木筏；但只是后来我听到一个声音哀号，并说:

"哦,请别，男孩，我发誓我永远不会告诉！"

另一个声音说的很大声：

"这是一个谎言，吉姆*特纳。 你已经采取行动这种方式。 你总是想要更多恩你分享的卡车，你一直得到了它，也因为你已经发誓't如果你没有你就会告诉我们。 但这次你已经说这是开玩笑一个时间太多。 你是卑鄙，treacherousest猎犬在这个国家。"

这个时候吉姆走了木筏. 我只是一个碧凌好奇心；并且我对自己说，汤姆也不会回来的，现在，所以我不会，我是一个-要看看有什么会在这里。 所以我放弃了我的手和膝盖中小通道，并蹑手蹑脚后在黑暗，直到有警告，但一个房间中间我和跨厅的得克萨斯州。然后在那里，我看到一个男人伸的地板上和绑手脚、以及两名男子站在他身上，而他们中的一个有一个暗淡的灯在他的手，另一个有把手枪。 这一保留指的手枪在男人的头发言，他说:

"我喜欢！ 我orter，太—一个意思是臭鼬!"

该男子的地板上会枯萎和说，"噢，请不要，
法案；我hain永远不要去告诉"。

每次他说，人的灯笼会笑
并且说：

"'契你是不是! 你从来没有说过不真实的事情'n那，你打赌
你的。" 一旦他说："听到他求！ 和yit如果我们没有得到最好
的他和绑住他他会杀死我们两个。 和什么用的? 脸谱用于
诺斯'n。 脸谱，因为我们站在我们的权利—那是什么。 但我躺在
你是不是要去威胁没有任何更多的吉姆*特纳。 把那
手枪，法案"。

比尔说：

"我不想这样，杰克Packard。 我杀了他—没有他
杀了老的哈特菲尔德的脸谱相同的方式—不他值得吗? "

"但是我不想杀他，我有我的理由。"

"保佑你的心脏他们说，杰克Packard! 我永远不会forgit你
只要是我的生活！"男人说在地板上，排序的哭哭啼啼。

Packard没有采取任何通知，但挂了他的灯上的
钉子，并开始对那里我就在那里在黑暗中，示意比尔
的到来。 我crawfished快，我可以大约两码，但是船只
倾斜所以，我不能作出非常良好的时间；因此，要保持得到
运行和逮住我爬进一个房间在上边。 对
男人来到一个扒在黑暗中，并且当Packard得到了我的
房，他说：

"在这里—来这里。"

并且在他来了，比尔之后他。 但在此之前，他们得到了在我
在上铺，走投无路，对不起，我来了。 然后他们站在那里，
他们的手放在窗台上的泊位，以及交谈。 我看不见
他们，但我可以告诉他们是通过威士忌，他们会一直有。 我
很高兴我没有喝威士忌，但它不会取得了很大差异
，因为大部分时间他们不一林荫我，因为我
没有呼吸。 我太害怕了。 而且，此外，一个身体无法
呼吸到和听到这样的谈话。 他们谈到低和认真。 Bill想
杀了特纳。 他说：

"他说他会告诉，他会的。 如果我们是给我们两个股来
他现在不会作任何区别之后的排和方式，
我们已经提供了他。 岸边的你出生了，他会打开状态的证据；现在，
你听我。 我把他的麻烦。"

"所以我说，"Packard，非常安静。
"怪了，我会选机开始认为你不是。 好吧，那么，这就是所有
正确的。 Le去这样做。"
"等一分钟，我hain没有我说yit. 你听到我。
拍摄的就是好的，但是安静的方式如果事情有待完成。
但是我说什么是这样的：它是不好的意义上去法院'n后一个
吊带如果你能git在什么你们要在一些方式的脸谱作良好
，并在同一时间不会带你进入没有resks. 是不是这样的吗？"

"你打赌是。 而是你如何去处理它这一次？"
"嗯，我的想法是这样的：我们将沙沙周围，并收集了什么
pickins我们忽视在舱房，并推进海岸和隐藏
卡车。 然后我们将等待。 现在我说它是不是布莱恩要更多的'n两个
小时befo'这一毁坏破坏和洗掉下河。 看到吗?
他就会被淹死，也不会有没有人责怪但他自己的
自我。 我认为这是一个considerble视线更好'n杀了他。 我
不要杀了一个人只要你能git不要蜘蛛'；这是不好的
意义上，这不是良好的道德。 不是我正确？"

"是的，我reck'n'。 但是s pose她不要破坏和洗
关掉？"
"嗯，我们可以等了两个小时无论如何，看看，我们不能？"
"好吧，那么来着。"
所以他们开始，我亮出，所有在一身冷汗和炒
前进。 这是黑暗的，因为距；但是我所说，在一种粗
耳语，"吉姆！"他回答说，就在我的手肘，一种一个
呻吟，我说：

"快点，吉姆，这不是没有时间打打闹闹和呻吟，有
一伙的杀人犯在那边，如果我们不能追捕他们的船只和设置
她漂流下来的河，所以这些家伙不能摆脱
沉船还有一个他们将在一个不好的解决。 但是，如果我们找到他们的
船，我们可以把所有的他们在一个坏修复的警长'll get'em。

快—快点！ 我会追捕的labboard边，你狩猎的stabboard. 你
开始在木筏，—"

"哦，我的乖乖，乖乖! RAF'? Dey ain'没有英国皇家空军'没有mo'；她做的打破松散连接走了我—恩在这里，我们是！"

第十三章

我逮住我的呼吸和最晕了过去。 闭嘴，上一个破坏与
这种团伙！ 但是它警告说没有时间可以sentimentering. 我们
得找到那艘船现在必须有它自己。 所以我们去一个
震动和颤抖下来的stabboard侧，并减缓工作，
也似乎一个星期之前，我们到了严峻的。 没有迹象的船只。 吉姆
说他不相信他可以去任何进一步的—那么害怕他没
几乎没有任何力气，他说。 但是我说的，过来，如果我们留在这
破坏我们正在修复，肯定的。 所以在我们横行一次。 我们袭击的
严厉的德克萨斯，并且发现它，然后拼凑一起转发的
天窗，挂在门到门边缘的天窗
是在水。 当我们得到了相当接近的交叉堂的门还
是小艇，确保足够的！ 我可能只是几乎看不到她。 我觉得过这么
感激。 在另一个第二我会一直登上了她，但只是后
门开了。 其中一名男子被卡住他的头了只有关于一对夫妇
的脚从我，我以为我走了，但他猛地在再次，并且
说：

"拉那怪的灯笼o'视，Bill!"

他甩到一个袋子的东西放到船上，然后得到了自己并设置下来。 这是Packard。 然后Bill他出来了。
Packard说，在一个较低的声音：

"所有准备好—滚开!"

我不能不挂在门上，我是如此微弱。 但是比尔说：

"坚持住—你去过他吗？"

"没有。 没有你好吗？"

"没有。 所以他得到了他的分享o'现金"。

"好吧，那么，走吧，没有用把卡车离开金钱"。

"说，他不会怀疑是我们？"

"也许他不会。 但我们得找到它呢。 一起走。"

因此，他们出去了。

门关上了，因为这是在像脱缰的野马的一面；和
半秒我是在船上和吉姆来翻滚后我。 我与
我的刀和砍断绳索，走我们走!

我们没有碰桨，而且我们没有说话，也不耳语的，也不很难
，甚至呼吸。 我们去滑翔迅速沿着，死沉默，过去的尖端
桨箱，和过去的严峻;然后在第二个或两个以上的我们是一
百码下面的破坏，并且在黑暗中浸泡她的，每一个
最后的迹象她和我们是安全的，并且知道它。

当我们是三个或者四百码下，我们看到
灯显示喜欢一点点火花在得克萨斯州门对第二，我们
知道通过那些坏蛋已经错过了他们的船，并开始
明白，他们正在只是尽可能多的麻烦现在作为吉姆*特纳
。

然后吉姆人的桨，我们拿出后我们的筏。 现在是
第一次，我开始担心的男人—我想我没有
时间之前。 我开始想如何可怕的是，即使杀人犯，
是在这样一个解决。 我对自己说，没有没有说但我可能
来的是一个凶手我自己还没有，然后我怎么会喜欢吗? 所以说，
我要Jim：

"第一个光，我们看到我们土地的一百码以下或以上
，在一个地方，这是一个很好的藏身的地方，你和小艇，
然后我会去和修复了一些纱，并获得有人去
帮派并得到他们了他们刮掉，因此他们可以挂在
他们的时间到来。"

但是，想法是一个失败；对于很快开始暴风雨再次，
而这一次比以往任何时候都更糟糕。 雨中倒下来，从来没有一个光
明；每个人都在床上，我估计。 我们蓬勃发展的沿顺流而下，
看灯光和看我们的筏。 经过长时间的雨水
让，但是云层，和保持呜咽，并通过
和通过一个闪光向我们展示了一个黑色的东西之前，浮动，并且我们做
它。

它是木筏，很高兴是我们得到船上的一次。 我们
看到一个光现在走下的权利，在岸边。 所以我说我会去

为。 小艇是半满的掠夺这一团伙已经偷走了那里
的破坏。 我们匆匆的筏在一堆，我告诉吉姆漂浮
着下降，并显示出光的时候，他的判断他已经走了两
英里，并且保持它在燃烧，直到我过来；然后我载人我的桨猛
的光。 因为我得到了对这三个或更多的四个表明在
一个山坡上。 这是一个村庄。 我闭上了岸光，放在
我的船和浮动。 正如我过去了，我看到它是一个灯笼挂在
jackstaff的双体渡船. 我去周围看守员，
一个-不知去向他睡觉的；以及通过和通过我找到他了栖息
在羊角向前，他的头来之前他的膝盖。 我给他的
肩两个或三个小猛推并开始哭了起来。

他搅拌在一种startlish方式；但是，当他看到这只是
我他花了一个良好的差距和伸展，然后他说:

"你好，怎么了？ 不要哭了，小家伙。 有什么麻烦？"

我说：

"巴氏，妈妈，妹妹，—"

然后我打破了下来。 他说：

"哦，该死，现在，不要采取如此；我们都有我们的烦恼，
和这个'n'll出来的所有权利。 有什么问题吗？"

"他们—他们—是你的守夜人的船吗？"

"是的,"他说,样的漂亮-好的-感到满意等。 "我是船长
和所有者和伙伴和试点和看守员和头甲板
方面；以及有时我的货运和乘客。 我是不是一样富有的老
吉姆凸背鳍，我不可以责怪的慷慨和好汤姆，迪克
和哈里为他是什么，满贯约钱的方式，他不会，但
我已经告诉他很多时间't我不会贸易的地方他说
我一个水手的生命的生活对我来说，我derned如果我会活着两英里了
o'镇 那里不是什么都不要去，不是所有他
spondulicks和尽可能多的多。 说我"

我打破了在，并说：

"他们是在一个可怕佩克的麻烦，—"

"是谁？"

"为什么，pap和妈妈和姐姐和姐妓女；以及如果你采取
你的渡船上去那里—"

"立在哪里？ 他们在哪里？"

"在残骸。"

"什么船?"

"为什么没有但是一个"。

"什么，你不是说真的沃尔特*斯科特?"

"是的."

"良好的土地！ 什么他们在干什么，亲切的缘故?"

"嗯，他们没有一个目的。"

"我敢打赌，他们没有！ 为什么，伟大善良的，不过是没有机会

他们如果他们不逃离庄强大的快！ 为什么，如何在国家没有他们曾经git入这样一个刮?"

"容易的。 错过妓女是一个访问了那里的城镇"

"是的布斯的着陆—来吧."

"她是一个参观的展位着陆，并且只是在边缘

晚上的她开始了她的黑人妇女在马渡到整夜留在她的朋友的房子，想什么，你可以叫她我disremember她的名字—他们失去了他们的转向-桨，并随即围绕与了一个浮动下，斯特恩第一，关于两英里，并鞍baggsed在沉船和摆渡和黑人女人和马是所有丢失， 但近的妓女她做了一个抓住了这艘沉船。 好了，大约一个小时黑暗之后，我们来吧下来在我们交易-平底船，以及它是如此黑暗中，我们没有注意到的破坏，直到我们是正确的；因此，我们鞍baggsed;但我们所有人保存，但是法案的惠普尔—哦，他是最好的cretur!—我最希望't它已经被我，我做。"

"我乔治！ 这是beatenest的事情我曾经袭击。 然后什么你都做什么？"

"好吧，我们叫喊和了，但它如此广泛存在，我们不能让人听到。 所以pap说有人得到了岸上，并得到帮助。 我是唯一一个会游泳，所以我做了一个破折号，以及近的妓女她说如果我没有罢工的帮助越快，来这里打猎了她的叔叔，他会修好的东西。 我做的土地约一英里之下，并被愚弄自从，试图让人民做些什么，但他们说，'是什么，在这样的夜晚，这样电流?没有没有在它的意义;去为蒸汽船.' 如果你现在就去—"

"杰克逊，我想，并指责它，我不知道但我会；但是谁在dingnation的一个'支付它？ 你认为你的pap—"

"为什么这是所有权利。 错过妓女，她托给我，特别是，她的叔叔凸背鳍—"

"伟大的枪！ 他是她的叔叔? 听我说，你休息，光在那边方式，而把西部的时候你混帐，大约有四分之一英里出来你会来找小酒馆;告诉他们到dart你到吉姆凸背鳍的，他只脚的法案。 不你愚弄任何，因为他会想知道的消息。 告诉他我就会有他的侄女一切安全之前，他可以得到的小镇。 驼背自己，现在，我是一个要周围的角这里来唤醒我的工程师。"

我击中的光线，但是当他转过拐角我回去并得到进入我的小艇和救她出去，然后拉上岸的简易水大约六百码，并藏自己在其中一些woodboats；因为我不能休息，直到我能看见的渡船开始。 但采取这周围的一切，我感觉品质舒适的客户服这一切的麻烦，伙，对于许多不会这样做。 我希望知道寡妇。 我判断出她会为我感到骄傲，用于帮助这些流氓，因为流氓和死搏是什么样的寡妇和好的人们的需要最感兴趣。

好了，用不了多久这里来的破坏，暗淡和黑糊糊的，滑沿着下来！ 一种的寒冷的发抖过了我，然后我袭击了她。 她很深，并且我看到在一分钟内没有发出警告不多的机会为任何人还活着她。 我把所有她周围和叫喊一点，但没有任何答案；所有死亡。 我觉得有点点心情沉重关于该团伙，但并不多，因为我认为如果他们能忍受它我可以。

然后来这里的渡船，所以我猛的中间河上一个长长的下流的斜；以及当我判断，我的眼睛-达我放在我的桨、以及回头一看看到她去嗅到周围的沉船小姐妓女的余，因为船长想知道她的叔叔凸背鳍希望他们；然后很快渡船得到它了，去了岸上， 和我放进我的工作和去一个蓬勃发展的顺流而下。

它似乎没有一个强大的前长时间的吉姆的光出现了；并且当它没有显示它看上去就像是一千英里关闭。 我到了那里，天空开始一个灰色的小东，所以我们击中一个岛屿，藏的木筏和沉没的小艇，并把在睡得像死人。

第十四章

通过和通过，当我们到了，我们打开过卡车的团伙已经偷走了断的破坏，并找到了靴子，以及毛毯和衣服，和所有各种各样的其它东西，而且很多的书，和一个望远镜和三个箱子的seegars. 我们没有过这种富有前在既不是我们的生活。 该seegars是总理。 我们裁掉所有下午的在树林里谈话，我阅读的书籍，并具有一个大好时机。 我告诉吉姆的所有有关发生了什么内部的沉船和渡船和我说这种事情是冒险的，但他说，他不希望有更多的冒险。 他说，当我在德克萨斯和他爬回来获得上木筏和发现她走了，他接近死亡，因为他判断，它是所有与他无论如何它可能是固定的；如果他没有得到保存的他会淹死；以及如果他没有得到保存，无论是谁救了他会把他送回家，以获得的报酬，然后错过Watson会卖给他南方，肯定的。 好了，他是正确的，他是最终的权利；他有一种罕见的水平头一个黑鬼.

我读了相当大的吉姆约国王和公爵和伯爵等，以及如何华而不实的他们穿好衣服，多大的风他们投入，并呼吁其他各国王陛下，您的恩典，你贵族身份，因此，'代替先生；和吉姆的眼睛窃听了他很感兴趣。 他说：

"我不知道他们是这么多的联合国um。 我hain不侯'回合没有联合国嗯，skasely，但是ole王Sollermun,onless你计数dem国王dat是在一个包er k'yards. 多少钱一个国王git？ "

"得到什么？ " 我说"为什么，他们得到一万美元一个月，如果他们想要的它；他们可以有一样多，因为他们想要的一切属于他们。"

"AIN'dat是同性恋吗？ 什么dey做了，哈克？ "

"他们没做什么！ 为什么，你怎么说话！ 他们只是设置。"

"没有，是dat吗"

"当然它是的。 他们只是周围设置除外，也许，当有一场战争；然后他们去的战争。 但其他时候，他们就是懒的周围；或者去霍金—刚刚霍金和sp—嘘!—d'你听到一个声音？"

我们跳过，并期待；但是它警告不但没有扑动的一个汽船的轮子掉下来，来点；所以我们来回。

"是的，"我说，"和其他时候，当事情是沉闷，他们大惊小怪的parlyment；以及如果每个人都不要去，这样他敲敲他们的头关闭。 但主要是他们挂轮的后宫。"

"圆钢'de哪？"

"后宫。"

"什么de后宫？"

"的地方，在那里他保留他的妻子。 你不知道的后宫？ 所罗门有一个，他有大约一百万的妻子"。

"为什么，是的，dat是如此；我—我做的忘了它。 后宫的一个bo'd'n-房子，我reck'n。 Mos'可能人家已经rackety次de nussery. 我reck'n de的妻子争吵considable；en dat折痕de球拍。 Yit dey说Sollermun de wises人dat过的生活. 我doan'采取任何股票在dat。 Bekase为什么会一个明智的男人希望生活在德音'er sich一blim-blammin'所有de时间？ 没有'契约，他不会的。 一个明智的男人'ud采取的连接登陆'a biler-factry；en den他可以居下来de biler-factry当他想要res'."

"好吧，但他是最聪明的人，无论如何，因为寡妇，她告诉我，她自己。"

"我doan k揭掉什么de威德说，他警告没有明智的人nuther. 他有一些er de爸爸-fetchedes'的方法我曾经看到的。 不你知道什么'dat智利dat他uz gwyne砍在两个？"

"是的，寡妇告诉我所有关于它。"

"好吧，巢穴！ 警告'dat de beatenes'概念在世界'? 你杰斯'采取en看看这一分钟。 Dah的德树桩，dah—dat是一个er de妇女；唯一就是你—dat是de yuther之一；我的Sollermun；en菜也门里亚尔的美元的钞票的德智利。 Bofe联合国你的权利要求。 什么我做什么？ 不我不要蜘蛛神'mongs'de邻国连接的现了其联合国您德比尔做b'long到，en汉'它过去是正确的，所有安全en王顺'，德的方式dat人dat了

任何进取心会吗？ 没有，我en捶德法案在两个连接得到的一半，
联合国给你,en de yuther一半以de yuther的女人。 Dat是de方式
Sollermun是gwyne做到妇女参与发展的德智利。 现在我要求你什么
de使用er dat一半账单?—不能买诺斯'n'妇女参与发展。 什么使用的一半
智利？ 我不得邓恩为联合国um。"

"但把它挂了，吉姆，你已经清洁错过了指责它,你已经
错过了一千英里。"

"谁? 我? 去'长。 Doan'跟我哟品脱。 我reck恩我
知道当我看到它；en dey ain'没有任何意义在sich干什么dat。 De
'spute警告不回合的一半智利、德spute是'回合整个智利；en
de人dat认为他的亲属解决'spute'回合整个智利妇女参与发展的一半
智利团结'知道，足以在出'n de雨。 Doan'跟我说话
'回合Sollermun，哈克，我知道他de回。"

"但我告诉你你没有得到这一点。"

"怪de点！ 我reck恩我知道我知道。 En我的你，de
真正的品脱下furder—这下更深。 它规定在德的方式
Sollermun是提高。 你把一个男人dat有在'y'一个或两个chillen;
是dat人gwyne要waseful o'chillen? 不，他不是，他不可能'ford。
他知道如何价值。 但你把一个男人dat是得到了什么叫五
万chillen跑圆钢'de房子里，连接它的diffunt. 他尽快砍
智利在两个为一只猫。 德伊的大量mo'. 智利er两个,mo'er下，
警告没有consekens到Sollermun，爸爸fatch他！"

我从来没有看到这样一个黑鬼. 如果他得到了一个概念，在他的头上一次，没有
发出警告没有得到它了。 他是最下在所罗门的任何
黑鬼我曾经看到的。 所以我去谈论其他国王，并让所罗门
幻灯片。 我告诉过关于路易十六的，得到了他的头砍掉在法国，长
时间之前；并且关于他的小男孩的海豚，这将一直是一个国王，
但他们带和关闭他在监狱里，有些人说他死在那里。

"宝'小家伙."

"但有人说他出来了，走了，来到美国。"

"Dat是很好的! 但他会pooty寂寞—dey ain'没有国王这里，
是戴伊，哈克？"

"不"。

"Den他不该隐git没有的情况。 什么他gwyne做什么？"

"嗯，我不知道。 他们中的一些被警察，以及一些
他们得知人们怎么跟法国人。"

"为什么，哈克，doan'de法国人交谈de同样的方式，我们吗？ "

"没有，吉姆，；你不明白一个字他们所说的—不是一个单一的
词"。

"嗯，现在，我被叮捣毁！ 怎么dat来吗？ "

"我不知道，但这是如此。 我得到了一些他们的jabber出的一本书。
S'pose一个人是来向你和说波利-voo-franzy—什么
将你觉得呢？ "

"我不认为这份厚礼'n；我会带连接抓他过de头—dat是，如果
他警告不白。 我不会低没有黑鬼叫我dat。"

"哪里哪里，不是叫你任何东西。 它只是说，你知道
如何说法语?"

"好吧，书房，他为什么不说呢？ "

"为什么，他是一个-说吧。 这是一个法国人的方式的说法"。

"嗯，这是一个怪ridicklous的方式，我doan'希望听到没有mo'
'回合。 Dey ain'没有任何意义。"

"听我说，吉姆，一只猫说话就像我们做什么？ "

"不，猫不"。

"好吧，没有一个牛？ "

"没有，一头母牛不，nuther."

"不会一只猫说话就像一头牛，或者一头牛帮你喜欢猫吗？ "

"不，他们不知道。"

"这是自然的权利和他们谈话彼此不同，是不是
它？ "

"课程。"

"并不是它的自然和正确的猫和一个牛来帮你不同
从我们吗？ "

"为什么，mos'sholy。"

"好吧，那么，为什么不是它的自然和正确的一个法国人
帮你不同的我们吗？ 你回答我。"

"是的一只猫一个男人，哈克？ "

"没有。"

"好吧，den，人家是不是没有意义的猫说话像个男人。 是一头牛一个
男人吗？ —呃是一头牛，一只猫吗？ "

"不，她不是。"

"好吧，den，她没有得到任何商业来帮你喜欢任何一个er的yuther的'em。 是一个法国人一个人吗？"

"是的。"

"好吧，巢穴！ 爸爸怪，为什么doan'他说话像个男人？ 你的回答我DAT!"

我看到它警告不使用浪费的话—你可以不学习一个黑鬼争论。 所以我辞职了。

第十五章

我们判断，三个晚上会取我们开罗，在底部的伊利诺伊州，俄亥俄河来，这是什么，我们是之后。 我们将出售的木筏上得到一个汽船去了俄亥俄州之间的免费国，然后出来的麻烦。

那么，第二个夜晚的大雾开始以来，我们作为一个towhead以配合，因为它不会做的尝试运行在雾；但是，当我划今后在独木舟，与行为做出快速、有警告不任何东西，但小树苗以配合。 我通过了该线周围的一个他们的权利在边缘的剪银行，但没有僵硬的前，木筏来蓬勃发展的以下活泼她撕下它的根源和走她去了。 我看到的雾关闭，这使我有病和害怕我不能让步对于大多数的一半分钟我看来—然后还有警告，没有木筏在视线，你在看不到二十码。 我跳进独木舟和运行回到严厉，抓住桨和她回。 但她没有来。 我是在这样一个快点我没有不附带条件的她。 我起来了，并试图解开她，但是我很激动我的手，握所以我不能几乎没有做任何事情他们。

只要我得到了开始我拿出后筏、热和重，对下towhead. 这是所有权利，因为它去了，但towhead警告不大会第六十码长，我立马通过它的脚下我的拍摄出入的纯白色的迷雾，没有没有更多的想法，这样我会比一个死人。

我认为，它不会做桨；第一我知道我会跑到银行或一个towhead或什么，我仍然设置和浮动，但它的强大

烦躁的业务必须把你的手还在这样的时间。 我
欢呼，并听取。 离开那里到我听到一个小
呐喊，并起来我的精神。 我去撕裂之后，听着急要
听一遍。 下一次它过来我看我警告不去它，但是
标题里的权利。 而下一次，我走走
左边吧—并没有获得上它多么，我是飞来飞去，
这种方式，和t'other，但它会直接今后所有的时间。

我有没有希望的傻瓜才会想到要打败一个锡泛，并击败它所有的
时间，但他从来没有，它是静止的地方之间哎呦，这
是使麻烦我。 好了，我打了一起，和我直接听到
的呐喊我身后。 我是纠结良好的现在。 那是别
人的呐喊，否则我扭转。

我扔的球拍了下来。 我听到的呐喊再一次；它的背后是
我还没有，但在一个不同的地方；它保存来，和保持改变其
地方，我一直回答，直到通过和它在我面前再次，
我知道目前已经摆在独木舟的头流，并且
我是所有权利，如果这是吉姆并不是其他一些raftsman喊叫. 我
不能告诉什么声音在雾，为什么看起来不自然的
，也不是自然的声音在雾。

百日咳去，并在大约一分钟我来一个蓬勃发展，
在一切银行与烟鬼的大树上，并且目前
扔我的左边和枪杀，其中很多障碍，相当
大吼，电流被撕裂，通过他们如此迅速的。

在第二个或两个它是固体的白和静。 我设置
完全静然后听我的心扑通，并且我认为我没
抽一口气的同时，它砰砰一百。

我只是放弃。 我知道是什么的问题。 这一切银行是
一个岛屿，和吉姆已经走了t'other侧。 它警告不towhead
，你可以浮动在十分钟。 它有很大的木材的一个经常
岛；这可能是五或六英里长，超过半英里宽。

我保持安静，与我的耳朵竖起约十五分钟，我估计。 我
是漂浮着的，当然，四个或五个里一个小时；但是你不
曾想到这一点。 不，你觉得你是铺设的死亡仍然在
水中；以及如果一个小窥的一个障碍滑的你不觉得自己
有多快你会，但你抓到你的呼吸，并认为，我的！ 如何

这一障碍的撕裂。 如果你觉得它是不是令人沮丧和孤独在一个有雾的方式，通过自己的晚上，你试试一次—你会看到的。

下面，大约一个半小时，我哎呀现在和以后；在我最后一次听到答案的一个长期的方式关闭，并试图遵循它，但我不能这样做，并直接我判断，我进入了一个筑巢的towheads，因为我有点暗淡的瞥见他们双方对我的—有时候只是一个狭窄的通道之间， 和一些我无法看见我知道那里是因为我听到洗当前对老死刷和垃圾，挂在银行。 嗯，我警告不久失去哎呦下之towheads；以及我只是想追逐他们一点时间，无论如何，因为这是糟糕于追杰克-o'灯笼。 你永远不知道一个声音躲避让和交换的地方这么快和这么多。

我不得不爪离岸很热闹的四五倍，保持从敲门群岛的河，所以我断定木筏必须对接存入银行，否则它将得到进一步的未来和明确的听证会—这是浮动更快一点比我是什么.

好吧，我似乎是在开放河流再次通过和通过，但我不能听到没有签署的呐喊nowheres. 我觉得吉姆已经取了上一个障碍，也许，这是所有与他。 我很累了，所以我放下来，在独木舟说我不会打扰没有更多。 我不想去睡觉，当然，但是我太困了我不能帮助它，所以我想我会带开玩笑一个小小的猫的-午睡。

但我认为这是一个多猫的-午睡，当我醒来的星星照耀着光明的，这雾是都走了，我们转向一个大弯严厉的第一次。 第一我不知道我在那里；我以为我是梦想；而当事情开始以来，回来给我他们似乎来昏暗的最后一周。

这是一个可怕的大河这里，具有最高和最厚种木材的两家银行，只是一个固体墙壁，以及我能看到星星。 我看着走下流，并看到一个黑色的斑点上水。 我把之后；但是，当我得到了它它警告不但没有几个锯材作出快速在一起。 然后我看到另一点，并追；然后另一个，而这一次我是正确的。 它是木筏。

当我到它吉姆是设置在那里与他的头来之前
他的膝盖，睡着了，他的右臂悬挂着的转向-桨。 在
其他桨被砸断和筏子布满了与树叶及
树枝和泥土。 那么她会有一个粗略的时间。

我快奠定了下吉姆的鼻子上的木筏，并开始
间隙，并且伸出我的拳头出来反对吉姆，说:
"你好，吉姆，我已经睡着了吗？ 为什么你不炒了我吗？"
"天啊，是dat你，哈克？ En你是不是死了—你是不是'
淹死—你的回阿恩? 这是太好了真的，亲爱的，太好了
为真实的。 让我看看你的智利，让我感到o'。 不，你是不是'死了！
你的回阿恩，现场连接王顺',jis de同ole哈克—de同ole
哈克，谢谢天啊！"

"什么事你，吉姆？ 你了-喝酒吗？"
"喝吗？ 有我本a-喝吗？ 有我有一个机会-
喝吗？"
"好吧，那么，是什么让你说话这么疯狂?"
"怎么我跟野外？"
"怎么样？ 为什么，海恩，你不是在说我回来了，和所有的
这些东西，因为如果我已经走了?"
"哈克—哈克，你看我在德的眼睛，看着我在德的眼睛。
海恩，你不奔走了?"
"走了? 为什么，什么样的国家是什么意思？ 我hain不了
走了无论哪里. 我会在哪里去？"
"好，听我说，老大，人家是sumf'n'错误的，dey。 是我我，或者谁
是我? 是我唯一或whah是我? 现在，dat是什么我想要知道的。"
"嗯，我觉得你在这里，普通的，但我认为你是一个纠结
率领的老傻瓜，吉姆。"
"我是说，是吗？ 好吧，你回答我的问题综合安全分遣队:没有你的手提出de行
独木舟德fer使fas'de拖头?"
"没有，我没有。 什么拖头？ 我的海恩看不到任何拖头部。"
"你hain不见没有towhead? 听我说，没有de线拉松
en de raf'去hummin了德河的连接离开你en de独木舟behine
在德雾吗？"
"什么雾吗？"

"为什么，德雾！—de雾dat是不要蜘蛛所有的夜晚。 恩你没
呐喊，en我没有的呐喊，告诉我们得混合在德岛屿连接一个联合国我们
得到了洛'en t'other一个是jis'如洛','加濑他不知道whah
他怎么了? 恩我没有破灭了阿恩很多er德国马克群岛en有turrible
时间的连接mos'混帐淹死? 现在ain'dat是，老板—不是这样的吗? 你
回答我dat。"

"好了，这实在是太多了我，吉姆。 我hain不看到没有雾，也没有
的岛屿，也没有烦恼,也没有什么。 我被设置在这里和你说话
所有的夜晚直到你睡觉去了大约十分钟前，我觉得我做
一样的。 你不能一个喝醉了，在这段时间，所以当然你已经
在做梦。"

"爸爸把它拿来的，怎么会是我gwyne梦想所有dat在十分钟? "

"好吧，挂这一切，你有没有梦想，因为没有任何它
发生。"

"但是，哈克，这是所有jis'作为纯给我—"

"不作任何区别如何平；没有什么。
我知道因为我已经在这里所有的时间。"

吉姆没有说什么，约五分钟，但设有研究
过它。 然后他说:

"好，丹，我reck恩我没有梦想它，哈克的；但是狗我的猫ef这是不
de powerfullest的梦想，我曾经看到的。 我的海恩不过没有梦b'fo'
dat的累了，我喜欢综合安全分遣队之一。"

"哦，好，这是所有权利，因为一个梦想不会的轮胎个体等
一切的时候。 但这是一个扼杀梦想告诉我所有
关于这一点，吉姆。"

所以吉姆去工作，并告诉过我整个事情权通过，只是
因为它发生了，只有他画了相当大的。 然后他说他必须
开始在和"'terpret"，因为它被送到一个警告。 他说的
第一towhead站在一个人会尽力做我们一些好，但是
目前是另一个男人这会让我们远离他。 哎呦
是警告，将来我们每现在，然后，如果我们
没有努力做出了解他们他们刚刚把我们带入
运气不好，'代替保持我们出来的。 很多towheads是麻烦
我们会进入有争吵的人和各种各样的意思
伙计，但是，如果我们志同道合我们的业务并没有回话和加剧

他们，我们会拉通过并获得出的雾和成的大清楚
河，这是自由国家，而不会有没有更多的麻烦。

它已经笼罩了漂亮的黑暗之后我得到筏子，但是
清理了现在.

"哦，好吧，这就是解释不够好，因为它的推移，吉姆，"我
说，"但是什么做这些事？"

这是叶子和垃圾上木筏和砸了桨。 你的
可以看到他们第一速率现在。

吉姆看着垃圾，然后看着我，和在垃圾桶
一次。 他已经得到了梦想中的固定如此强烈在他的头上，他不能
似乎动摇它的宽松和得到的事实回到其再次发生的权利
的距离。 但当他没有得到事情理顺周围他看着我
的稳定而没有微笑，并说：

"什么戴伊斯坦'？ 我'se gwyne要告诉你。 当我得到了所有的穿
了妇女参与发展工作，连接妇女参与发展de呼唤你，连接去睡觉，我的心脏怎么了
mos'打破了bekase你怎么了洛'en我没有'k'揭掉没有'mo'什么成为
er我en de raf'. 当我醒来时连接的现你回阿恩，所有安全en
王顺'，德的眼泪来了，我可以了下来在我的膝盖连接吻你脚上，
我是如此的感谢。 恩你怎么了在想什么叫怎么了你怎么可以做一个
傻瓜紫外线ole吉姆妇女参与发展的一个谎言。 Dat卡车dah是垃圾；en垃圾是什么
人是dat把土上de头er dey弗伦的连接，使他们感到羞耻。"

然后他慢慢走到帐蓬，并就在那里
什么都没说但是这个。 但这是不够的。 这让我觉得
那意味着我几乎可以亲吻他的脚让他把它带回来。

这是前十五分钟我可以自己去和
谦卑自己到一个黑鬼，但我做到了，我警告永远不抱歉这
之后，两者都不是。 我没有做他没有更多的意思技巧，我不会
做那个，如果我一个人知道这会让他有这样的感觉。

第十六章

我们睡过最有天，并开始在夜间，一点点的方式背后的一个
可怕的长长的木筏那是因为长会通过作为一个队伍。 她有
四个长扫描每一端，因此我们判断她进行了多达三十
人，有可能的。 她有五个大棚屋上，广泛分开，打开

营火中间，和一个高大旗杆在每个结束。 有一个
电力的风格是她的。 它为什么被一个raftsman
在这一工艺。

我们去漂流到一个大弯，晚上蒙上阴影，并
得到了热。 这条河是非常广泛的，并被围墙与固体的木材上
的两面；你不能看到一个突破，它几乎没有或者一个光。 我们
谈到了开罗，并想知道是否我们会知道这时我们
得到了它。 我说可能我们不会的，因为我曾听说有警告不
但约有一打的房子还有，如果他们没有他们点燃
了，是如何我们会知道我们是通过一个小镇？ 吉姆说，如果
两个大的河流加在一起，那会显现。 但我说也许
我们可能会认为我们是通过脚的一个岛屿和进入
相同的旧河。 感到不安吉姆—我也是。 因此，问题
是，怎么办？ 我说，桨上岸的第一个时光表明，并
告诉他们巴氏是后来随着一个交易-平底船，是
绿色的手在业务，并想知道如何远这是对开罗举行。
吉姆认为这是一个很好的想法，所以我们花了一个烟雾在它和等待。

有警告说没有什么要做，但现在看出来了急剧的城镇，
而不是通过它没有看到它。 他说他会大一定要看到它，
因为他会是一个自由的人的他看到它，但是如果他错过了他会
是在一个奴隶的国家又没有显示更多的自由。 每一个小小的
同时，他跳起来说：

"Dah她是什么？ "

但是它警告。 这是杰克灯笼，或闪电的错误；因此他
再次下降，去看，以前一样。 吉姆说他
所有的过trembly和狂热的是如此接近自由。 好吧，我可以告诉
你我所有trembly和狂热，也听到他，因为我
开始获得通过我的头，他是最自由和谁是
责怪吗？ 为什么，我的。 我不能说出我的良心，无论怎样
，也没有办法。 它得到了令人不安的我，所以我不能休息，我不能仍然停留
在一个地方。 它没有我回家之前，这是什么东西是
我做的。 但是现在它没有；以及它与我留，并烧焦我的
越来越多。 我试图做出自己，我警告不要怪，
因为我没有跑掉吉姆从他的合法所有者；但是它警告不没有用的，
良心上说，每一次，"但是你知道他是运行为

他的自由，并且你可以划上岸，并告诉别人。" 就
是这样—我不能左右，不是吧. 这是在那里捏。
良心对我说"什么了可怜的沃特森小姐对你做了，
你能看到她的鬼去吧你的眼睛下，从来不说一
个字? 什么那个可怜的老女人对你做的，你可以
治疗她的意思吗? 为什么，她想了解你你的书，她想
了解你，你的举止，她想好给你的每一个方式，她
知道如何。 她就是这么做的。"

我感觉这样的意思，这么惨我希望我已经死了。 我
坐立不安的上下了木筏，滥用我自己来我自己，吉姆
坐立不安的上下去我。 我们我们既不能保持静止。 每
一次，他跳舞周围，并说，"新的开罗!"它过去我喜欢的
一个镜头，我想如果它被开罗我估计我会死的
miserableness.

吉姆跟大声的说出所有的时间，而我是说我自己。 他是
怎么说的第一件事他会做的时候，他得到了自由状态下的他
会去节省的金钱，从来没有花一分，当他
有足够的他会买他的妻子，它拥有一个农场附近
那里的沃特森小姐住；以及然后他们将这两个工作来购买这两个
孩子，如果他们掌握不会出卖他们,他们会得到一个Ab'litionist
去偷走他们。

它最冻结了我听到这样的谈话。 他不敢跟
这样的谈话在他的生活。 只是看看有什么不同，它由于他的
钟他判断他是免费的。 它是根据一句老话:
"给一个黑鬼一寸他就会把一个埃尔." 我认为，这是什么来
的我不想的。 这里的这个黑鬼，我不如帮助
逃跑，马上就出台脚，并说他会偷他
儿童的儿童，属于一个男人我甚至不知道，男人
没有做我没有任何伤害。

我很抱歉听到吉姆说，它是这样一个降低他。 我的
良心得到了搅拌我比以往任何时候更热，直到最后我说，
"让我—这是不是太晚了呢—我会桨上岸的第一个光
和告诉我们。" 我感到轻松和快乐和轻如鸿毛。 我所有的
麻烦已经走了。 我去找出尖锐的一个光，并且排序
唱歌为我自己。 通过和通过一个表现。 吉姆*唱出:

"我们是安全的，哈克，我们是安全的！ 跳起来的裂缝溜溜的高跟鞋！ Dat是de好好极开罗拉，我jis知道它！"

我说：

"我要独木舟去看看吉姆。 它可能不是，你知道。"

他跳下并得到了独木舟准备，并把他的旧外套

底对我的设置上，并给我的桨；以及正如我推断，他说：

"Pooty很快我就是一个-喊'n'对快乐，我会说，它的所有账户o'哈克；我是个自由的人，我不能永远本自由ef它没奔为哈克;哈克做了。 吉姆永远不会forgit你，哈克；你的生物多样性和生态系统服务'弗伦'
Jim有过，en你的只有弗伦'ole吉姆的到了现在。"

我被划掉，所有的在出汗告诉他，但是当他说，这似乎种类的采取的掖所有我了 我去缓慢然后，我警告不正确下定是否我很高兴我开始或者我是不是警告。 当我离五十码，吉姆说：

"Dah你去，de ole真正的哈克;de在'y白genlman dat过kep'他的承诺ole吉姆。"

嗯，我只是觉得生病了。 但我说，我这样做—我不可能摆脱它。 然后随之而来的一个小艇和两个男人在与枪支，以及他们停止我停止。 其中一个说：

"那是什么那边?"

"一块木筏，"我所说的。

"你属于它？"

"是的，先生。"

"任何男人吗"

"只有一个，长官。"

"嗯，有五个黑鬼跑到晚上了那边，上述头

弯曲。 是你的人白色或黑色的吗？"

我没有回答了提示。 我试过，但是这句话不会来了。 我试图用于第二个或两个以振作起来并与它，但我警告别人了—没有胆量的一只兔子。 我看我是在削弱，所以我只是放弃努力，并说：

"他是白色的。"

"我想我们会去看看我们自己。"

"我希望你会的，"我说，"因为它的颈的存在，也许你会帮我拖筏上岸，这里的光线。 他生病—等等是妈妈，玛丽安。"

"噢，魔鬼！ 我们在赶时间，孩子。 但我s pose我们已经有了。 来吧，扣你的桨，并让我们获得的。"

我扣我的桨，他们奠定了他们的桨。 当我们了作出一笔或两个，我说：

"巴氏会被强大的多obleeged到你，我可以告诉你。 每个人都离开的时候我想让他们帮我拖筏上岸，而且我不能做我自己。"

"好吧，这就是地狱般的意思。 奇怪，太。 我说，小子，怎么回事与你的父亲吗？"

"这是第一个的—嗯，这不是什么太多。"

他们停止拉。 它警告说不但是一个强大的小办法的筏现在。 一个人说：

"孩子，这是一个谎言。 有什么问题你的子宫颈? 答案了广场，现在，它将可以对你更好。"

"我会的，主席先生，我会的，诚实的—但是不要离开我们，请。 是的先生们，如果你只领先，让我举起你的标题，你没必要来一个-靠近木筏—请不要."

"她回来的，约翰，她回来了！"说的一个。 他们支持的水。 "保持距离，男孩—保持looard. 混淆了，我只是预期的风有炸飞到美国。 你的子宫颈有小痘，你知道宝贵的。 为什么你没站出来，说这样的吗？ 你想要蔓延这一切结束吗？"

"好的，"我说，a-哭哭啼啼的，"我已经告诉大家之前，和他们只是走了离开了我们。"

"可怜的魔鬼，有东西在那。 我们是正确的下对不起你，但是我们—好吧，挂了，我们不希望小痘，你看。 看看这里，我会告诉你该怎么做。 不你试图通过自己的土地，或者您就会一切粉碎成碎片。 你漂浮着下降了约二十英里，你会来的一个小镇上的左手边的河流。 这将是漫长的太阳后，那么，当你寻求帮助你告诉他们你的伙计下来的所有与寒热病。 不是一个傻瓜，让人猜测是什么的问题。 现在我们要做你的好意;

所以你只是把二十英里我们之间，这是一个很好的男孩。 它不会
做任何良好的土地那边光线是—这只是一个木院。
说的，我觉得你父亲的穷人，和我一定说，他是在相当困难的
运气。 在这里，我将把一个二十美元的金块在这个棋盘上，你会得到
它的时候它漂浮过。 我感受到强大的意思是离开你，但是我的王国! 它
不会做傻瓜与小痘，你不看看吗? "

"等一下，帕克说，"其他人"，这里是二十把
董事会给我。 再见，孩子，你做的，因为帕克先生告诉过你，你就会
被所有的权利。"

"那么，我的孩子—再见，再见。 如果你看到任何逃亡
黑奴，你得到的帮助和逮捕他们，你可以赚些钱，通过
它。"

"良好的-再见，先生，"我说，"我不会让任何逃亡黑奴获得通过如果我
我能帮助它。"

他们去了我得搭乘筏子，感觉不好和低，因为
我知道很好，我做错了，我看到它警告不使用我
来试着要学会做正确的；一个机构，没有得到正确开始时
他一点没有得到任何显示—当捏来没有什么
要回到他并让他对他的工作，因此他被击败。 然后我
想一分钟，并对自己说，举行；s pose你会做正确的
，并给吉姆，你会感觉好多了，比你现在做什么? 不，我说，
我会觉得不好—我觉得就同样的方式，我现在要做的。 好吧，那么，我说，
这有什么用你的学习做时，它的麻烦去做的权利
并不是没有麻烦到做错了，而工资是一样的? 我被
卡住了。 我不能回答这个问题。 所以我觉得我不会打扰没有更多
关于它的，但是在此之后总是做哪来最方便的时候。

我走进小屋;吉姆警告不存在。 我看起来周围的一切；他
警告不在任何地方。 我说:

"吉姆！"

"在这里，我是说，哈克。 是戴伊o'视yit? 不要大声说话."

他在河的下船尾桨，只有他的鼻子。 我告诉
他们的视线，所以他来到船上。 他说:

"我是一个听到的所有de谈话，我滑入德河的连接是gwyne
推进sho'如果dey来，上船。 Den我gwyne游de
raf'agin当dey已经走了。 但lawsy，你有没有欺骗他们，哈克!

Dat怎么de smartes'躲闪! 我告诉你，智利，我'spec它节省'ole吉姆—
奥吉姆是不会forgit你dat，亲爱的。"

然后我们谈到了这笔钱。 这是一个非常好的提高—二十美元美元。 吉姆说我们可以采取的甲板上通道上的汽船，现在，和这笔钱将我们尽我们想在自由的国家。他说二十哩更多的警告不止于木筏去，但是他希望我们已经在那里了。

朝黎明我们绑起来，吉姆是强大的特别是关于隐藏的木筏好。 然后，他曾有一天固定的东西在束，并获得所有准备放弃漂流。

那天晚上大约十个我们霍夫在视线灯的一个小镇里下一个左手弯曲。

我去了独木舟询问相关的信息。 很快我发现了一个人在河边的一个小艇，设置一个小跑线。 我不等了，说:

"先生，是这镇开罗? "

"开罗? 没有。 你必须一个怪的傻瓜。"

"什么城镇是吧，先生? "

"如果你想要知道，去找出来。 如果你留在这里困扰我周围的大约一半一分钟时间越长，你会得到一些东西你不会想要的。"

我划的木筏。 吉姆是可怕的失望，但我说不心，开罗的将是下一个地方，我认为.

我们通过了另一个小镇之前，白天，我要再次; 但这是高地，所以我不去。 没有高地有关开罗，吉姆说。 我已经忘了它。 我们奠定了这一天在一个towhead容忍靠近左手银行。 我开始怀疑的东西。 因此，没有吉姆。 我说:

"也许我们去开罗在雾的夜晚。"

他说:

"团结'le谈论它，哈克。 宝'黑鬼不能没有运气。 我awluz'spected dat响尾蛇皮警告无法完成与其工作。"

"我希望我从来没见过这蛇的皮肤，吉姆—我希望我从来没有奠定了上它的眼睛。"

"这不是你的错哈克; 你不知道。 你不责怪哟'self '回合"。

当它是白天，这里是清楚的俄亥俄州的水沿岸，确保足够的和外部的旧经常泥泞的! 因此，这是所有与开罗。

我们谈过这一切结束了。 它不会采取的海岸；我们不能采取的木筏上流，课程。 有警告，没有办法，但要等待黑暗的，并开始在独木舟，并采取机会。 因此，我们睡了一天当中杨木丛，以便将新的工作，并且当我们回到筏关于黑暗的独木舟不见了！

我们不说一个字一个良好的时间。 有警告说没什么可说的。 我们都知道的不够好这是一些更多的工作的响尾蛇-皮肤；那么，什么是利用谈谈吗？ 它只会看起来像我们找到错误，这将是必要获取更多的运气不好，并保持对获取它，直到我们知道的足够保持静止。

和通过我们谈论了什么我们做的更好，并且发现有警告不会没有办法，但只是跟着下来的木筏直到我们有机会买一个独木舟回去。 我们警告不要借钱的时候有心眼的人周围，pap会做，因为这可能设置人之后我们。

因此，我们推出了天黑后上木筏。

任何人不相信，但它的愚蠢来处理蛇的皮肤，毕竟，这蛇的皮肤为我们做了，会认为它现在，如果他们读了，看看有什么更它为我们所做的一切。

的地方购买是独木舟的木筏铺设在海岸。 但是，我们没有看到没有筏铺设的；因此，我们一起去过三个小时更多。 好了，晚了灰色和品质厚，这是下一个卑鄙的事情雾。 你不能告诉的形状河，你不能看见没有距离。 它得到了非常晚，仍，然后随之而来的一个汽船上的河流。 我们点亮的灯笼，并判断出她会看到它。 最流船只没有generly来接近我们；他们出去，并按照该条，并寻找便于水下暗礁；但是，这样的夜晚，他们的公牛的权利通道的对整个河。

We could hear her pounding along, but we didn’t see her good till she was close. She aimed right for us. Often they do that and try to see how close they can come without touching; sometimes the wheel bites off a sweep, and then the pilot sticks his head out and laughs, and thinks

he’s mighty smart. Well, here she comes, and we said she was going to try and shave us; but she didn’t seem to be sheering off a bit. She was a big one, and she was coming in a hurry, too, looking like a black cloud with rows of glow-worms around it; but all of a sudden she bulged out, big and scary, with a long row of wide-open furnace doors shining like red-hot teeth, and her monstrous bows and guards hanging right over us. There was a yell at us, and a jingling of bells to stop the engines, a powwow of cussing, and whistling of steam—and as Jim went overboard on one side and I on the other, she come smashing straight through the raft.

I dived—and I aimed to find the bottom, too, for a thirty-foot wheel had got to go over me, and I wanted it to have plenty of room. I could always stay under water a minute; this time I reckon I stayed under a minute and a half. Then I bounced for the top in a hurry, for I was nearly busting. I popped out to my armpits and blowed the water out of my nose, and puffed a bit. Of course there was a booming current; and of course that boat started her engines again ten seconds after she stopped them, for they never cared much for raftsmen; so now she was churning along up the river, out of sight in the thick weather, though I could hear her.

I sung out for Jim about a dozen times, but I didn’t get any answer; so I grabbed a plank that touched me while I was “treading water,” and struck out for shore, shoving it ahead of me. But I made out to see that the drift of the current was towards the left-hand shore, which meant that I was in a crossing; so I changed off and went that way.

It was one of these long, slanting, two-mile crossings; so I was a good long time in getting over. I made a safe landing, and clumb up the bank. I couldn’t see but a little ways, but I went poking along over rough ground for a quarter of a mile or more, and then I run across a big old-fashioned double log-house before I noticed it. I was going to rush by and get away, but a lot of dogs jumped out and went to howling and barking at me, and I knowed better than to move another peg.

Chapter XVII

IN about a minute somebody spoke out of a window without putting his head out, and says:

“Be done, boys! Who’s there?”

I says:

“It’s me.”

“Who’s me?”

“George Jackson, sir.”

“What do you want?”

“I don’t want nothing, sir. I only want to go along by, but the dogs won’t let me.”

“What are you prowling around here this time of night for—hey?”

“I warn’t prowling around, sir, I fell overboard off of the steamboat.”

“Oh, you did, did you? Strike a light there, somebody. What did you say your name was?”

“George Jackson, sir. I’m only a boy.”

“Look here, if you’re telling the truth you needn’t be afraid—nobody’ll hurt you. But don’t try to budge; stand right where you are. Rouse out Bob and Tom, some of you, and fetch the guns. George Jackson, is there anybody with you?”

“No, sir, nobody.”

I heard the people stirring around in the house now, and see a light. The man sung out:

“Snatch that light away, Betsy, you old fool—ain’t you got any sense? Put it on the floor behind the front door. Bob, if you and Tom are ready, take your places.”

“All ready.”

“Now, George Jackson, do you know the Shepherdsons?”

“No, sir; I never heard of them.”

“Well, that may be so, and it mayn’t. Now, all ready. Step forward, George Jackson. And mind, don’t you hurry—come mighty slow. If there’s anybody with you, let him keep back—if he shows himself he’ll

be shot. Come along now. Come slow; push the door open yourself—just enough to squeeze in, d' you hear?"

I didn't hurry; I couldn't if I'd a wanted to. I took one slow step at a time and there warn't a sound, only I thought I could hear my heart. The dogs were as still as the humans, but they followed a little behind me. When I got to the three log doorsteps I heard them unlocking and unbarring and unbolting. I put my hand on the door and pushed it a little and a little more till somebody said, "There, that's enough—put your head in." I done it, but I judged they would take it off.

The candle was on the floor, and there they all was, looking at me, and me at them, for about a quarter of a minute: Three big men with guns pointed at me, which made me wince, I tell you; the oldest, gray and about sixty, the other two thirty or more—all of them fine and handsome—and the sweetest old gray-headed lady, and back of her two young women which I couldn't see right well. The old gentleman says:

"There; I reckon it's all right. Come in."

As soon as I was in the old gentleman he locked the door and barred it and bolted it, and told the young men to come in with their guns, and they all went in a big parlor that had a new rag carpet on the floor, and got together in a corner that was out of the range of the front windows — there warn't none on the side. They held the candle, and took a good look at me, and all said, "Why, HE ain't a Shepherdson—no, there ain't any Shepherdson about him." Then the old man said he hoped I wouldn't mind being searched for arms, because he didn't mean no harm by it—it was only to make sure. So he didn't pry into my pockets, but only felt outside with his hands, and said it was all right. He told me to make myself easy and at home, and tell all about myself; but the old lady says:

"Why, bless you, Saul, the poor thing's as wet as he can be; and don't you reckon it may be he's hungry?"

"True for you, Rachel—I forgot."

So the old lady says:

"Betsy" (this was a nigger woman), "you fly around and get him something to eat as quick as you can, poor thing; and one of you girls go and wake up Buck and tell him—oh, here he is himself. Buck, take this

little stranger and get the wet clothes off from him and dress him up in some of yours that's dry."

Buck looked about as old as me—thirteen or fourteen or along there, though he was a little bigger than me. He hadn't on anything but a shirt, and he was very frowzy-headed. He came in gaping and digging one fist into his eyes, and he was dragging a gun along with the other one. He says:

"Ain't they no Shepherdsons around?"

They said, no, 'twas a false alarm.

"Well," he says, "if they'd a ben some, I reckon I'd a got one."

They all laughed, and Bob says:

"Why, Buck, they might have scalped us all, you've been so slow in coming."

"Well, nobody come after me, and it ain't right I'm always kept down; I don't get no show."

"Never mind, Buck, my boy," says the old man, "you'll have show enough, all in good time, don't you fret about that. Go 'long with you now, and do as your mother told you."

When we got up-stairs to his room he got me a coarse shirt and a roundabout and pants of his, and I put them on. While I was at it he asked me what my name was, but before I could tell him he started to tell me about a bluejay and a young rabbit he had catched in the woods day before yesterday, and he asked me where Moses was when the candle went out. I said I didn't know; I hadn't heard about it before, no way.

"Well, guess," he says.

"How'm I going to guess," says I, "when I never heard tell of it before?"

"But you can guess, can't you? It's just as easy."

"WHICH candle?" I says.

"Why, any candle," he says.

"I don't know where he was," says I; "where was he?"

"Why, he was in the DARK! That's where he was!"

"Well, if you knowed where he was, what did you ask me for?"

"Why, blame it, it's a riddle, don't you see? Say, how long are you going to stay here? You got to stay always. We can just have booming

times—they don't have no school now. Do you own a dog? I've got a dog—and he'll go in the river and bring out chips that you throw in. Do you like to comb up Sundays, and all that kind of foolishness? You bet I don't, but ma she makes me. Confound these ole britches! I reckon I'd better put 'em on, but I'd ruther not, it's so warm. Are you all ready? All right. Come along, old hoss."

Cold corn-pone, cold corn-beef, butter and buttermilk—that is what they had for me down there, and there ain't nothing better that ever I've come across yet. Buck and his ma and all of them smoked cob pipes, except the nigger woman, which was gone, and the two young women. They all smoked and talked, and I eat and talked. The young women had quilts around them, and their hair down their backs. They all asked me questions, and I told them how pap and me and all the family was living on a little farm down at the bottom of Arkansaw, and my sister Mary Ann run off and got married and never was heard of no more, and Bill went to hunt them and he warn't heard of no more, and Tom and Mort died, and then there warn't nobody but just me and pap left, and he was just trimmed down to nothing, on account of his troubles; so when he died I took what there was left, because the farm didn't belong to us, and started up the river, deck passage, and fell overboard; and that was how I come to be here. So they said I could have a home there as long as I wanted it. Then it was most daylight and everybody went to bed, and I went to bed with Buck, and when I waked up in the morning, drat it all, I had forgot what my name was. So I laid there about an hour trying to think, and when Buck waked up I says:

"Can you spell, Buck?"

"Yes," he says.

"I bet you can't spell my name," says I.

"I bet you what you dare I can," says he.

"All right," says I, "go ahead."

"G-e-o-r-g-e J-a-x-o-n—there now," he says.

"Well," says I, "you done it, but I didn't think you could. It ain't no slouch of a name to spell—right off without studying."

I set it down, private, because somebody might want ME to spell it next, and so I wanted to be handy with it and rattle it off like I was used to it.

It was a mighty nice family, and a mighty nice house, too. I hadn't seen no house out in the country before that was so nice and had so much style. It didn't have an iron latch on the front door, nor a wooden one with a buckskin string, but a brass knob to turn, the same as houses in town. There warn't no bed in the parlor, nor a sign of a bed; but heaps of parlors in towns has beds in them. There was a big fireplace that was bricked on the bottom, and the bricks was kept clean and red by pouring water on them and scrubbing them with another brick; sometimes they wash them over with red water-paint that they call Spanish-brown, same as they do in town. They had big brass dog-irons that could hold up a saw-log. There was a clock on the middle of the mantelpiece, with a picture of a town painted on the bottom half of the glass front, and a round place in the middle of it for the sun, and you could see the pendulum swinging behind it. It was beautiful to hear that clock tick; and sometimes when one of these peddlers had been along and scoured her up and got her in good shape, she would start in and strike a hundred and fifty before she got tuckered out. They wouldn't took any money for her.

Well, there was a big outlandish parrot on each side of the clock, made out of something like chalk, and painted up gaudy. By one of the parrots was a cat made of crockery, and a crockery dog by the other; and when you pressed down on them they squeaked, but didn't open their mouths nor look different nor interested. They squeaked through underneath. There was a couple of big wild-turkey-wing fans spread out behind those things. On the table in the middle of the room was a kind of a lovely crockery basket that had apples and oranges and peaches and grapes piled up in it, which was much redder and yellower and prettier than real ones is, but they warn't real because you could see where pieces had got chipped off and showed the white chalk, or whatever it was, underneath.

This table had a cover made out of beautiful oilcloth, with a red and blue spread-eagle painted on it, and a painted border all around. It come all the way from Philadelphia, they said. There was some books, too,

piled up perfectly exact, on each corner of the table. One was a big family Bible full of pictures. One was Pilgrim's Progress, about a man that left his family, it didn't say why. I read considerable in it now and then. The statements was interesting, but tough. Another was Friendship's Offering, full of beautiful stuff and poetry; but I didn't read the poetry. Another was Henry Clay's Speeches, and another was Dr. Gunn's Family Medicine, which told you all about what to do if a body was sick or dead. There was a hymn book, and a lot of other books. And there was nice split-bottom chairs, and perfectly sound, too—not bagged down in the middle and busted, like an old basket.

They had pictures hung on the walls—mainly Washingtons and Lafayettes, and battles, and Highland Marys, and one called "Signing the Declaration." There was some that they called crayons, which one of the daughters which was dead made her own self when she was only fifteen years old. They was different from any pictures I ever see before — blacker, mostly, than is common. One was a woman in a slim black dress, belted small under the armpits, with bulges like a cabbage in the middle of the sleeves, and a large black scoop-shovel bonnet with a black veil, and white slim ankles crossed about with black tape, and very wee black slippers, like a chisel, and she was leaning pensive on a tombstone on her right elbow, under a weeping willow, and her other hand hanging down her side holding a white handkerchief and a reticule, and underneath the picture it said "Shall I Never See Thee More Alas." Another one was a young lady with her hair all combed up straight to the top of her head, and knotted there in front of a comb like a chair-back, and she was crying into a handkerchief and had a dead bird laying on its back in her other hand with its heels up, and underneath the picture it said "I Shall Never Hear Thy Sweet Chirrup More Alas." There was one where a young lady was at a window looking up at the moon, and tears running down her cheeks; and she had an open letter in one hand with black sealing wax showing on one edge of it, and she was mashing a locket with a chain to it against her mouth, and underneath the picture it said "And Art Thou Gone Yes Thou Art Gone Alas." These was all nice pictures, I reckon, but I didn't somehow seem to take to them, because if ever I was down a little they always give me the fan-tods. Everybody

was sorry she died, because she had laid out a lot more of these pictures to do, and a body could see by what she had done what they had lost. But I reckoned that with her disposition she was having a better time in the graveyard. She was at work on what they said was her greatest picture when she took sick, and every day and every night it was her prayer to be allowed to live till she got it done, but she never got the chance. It was a picture of a young woman in a long white gown, standing on the rail of a bridge all ready to jump off, with her hair all down her back, and looking up to the moon, with the tears running down her face, and she had two arms folded across her breast, and two arms stretched out in front, and two more reaching up towards the moon—and the idea was to see which pair would look best, and then scratch out all the other arms; but, as I was saying, she died before she got her mind made up, and now they kept this picture over the head of the bed in her room, and every time her birthday come they hung flowers on it. Other times it was hid with a little curtain. The young woman in the picture had a kind of a nice sweet face, but there was so many arms it made her look too spidery, seemed to me.

This young girl kept a scrap-book when she was alive, and used to paste obituaries and accidents and cases of patient suffering in it out of the Presbyterian Observer, and write poetry after them out of her own head. It was very good poetry. This is what she wrote about a boy by the name of Stephen Dowling Bots that fell down a well and was drownded:

ODE TO STEPHEN DOWLING BOTS, DEC’D

And did young Stephen sicken, And did young Stephen die? And did the sad hearts thicken, And did the mourners cry?

No; such was not the fate of Young Stephen Dowling Bots; Though sad hearts round him thickened, ‘Twas not from sickness’ shots.

No whooping-cough did rack his frame, Nor measles drear with spots; Not these impaired the sacred name Of Stephen Dowling Bots.

Despised love struck not with woe That head of curly knots, Nor stomach troubles laid him low, Young Stephen Dowling Bots.

O no. Then list with tearful eye, Whilst I his fate do tell. His soul did from this cold world fly By falling down a well.

They got him out and emptied him; Alas it was too late; His spirit was gone for to sport aloft In the realms of the good and great.

If Emmeline Grangerford could make poetry like that before she was fourteen, there ain’t no telling what she could a done by and by. Buck said she could rattle off poetry like nothing. She didn’t ever have to stop to think. He said she would slap down a line, and if she couldn’t find anything to rhyme with it would just scratch it out and slap down another one, and go ahead. She warn’t particular; she could write about anything you choose to give her to write about just so it was sadful. Every time a man died, or a woman died, or a child died, she would be on hand with her “tribute” before he was cold. She called them tributes. The neighbors said it was the doctor first, then Emmeline, then the undertaker—the undertaker never got in ahead of Emmeline but once, and then she hung fire on a rhyme for the dead person’s name, which was Whistler. She warn’t ever the same after that; she never complained, but she kinder pined away and did not live long. Poor thing, many’s the time I made myself go up to the little room that used to be hers and get out her poor old scrap-book and read in it when her pictures had been aggravating me and I had soured on her a little. I liked all that family, dead ones and all, and warn’t going to let anything come between us. Poor Emmeline made poetry about all the dead people when she was alive, and it didn’t seem right that there warn’t nobody to make some about her now she was gone; so I tried to sweat out a verse or two myself, but I couldn’t seem to make it go somehow. They kept Emmeline’s room trim and nice, and all the things fixed in it just the way she liked to have them when she was alive, and nobody ever slept there. The old lady took care of the room herself, though there was plenty of niggers, and she sewed there a good deal and read her Bible there mostly.

Well, as I was saying about the parlor, there was beautiful curtains on the windows: white, with pictures painted on them of castles with vines all down the walls, and cattle coming down to drink. There was a little old piano, too, that had tin pans in it, I reckon, and nothing was ever so lovely as to hear the young ladies sing “The Last Link is Broken” and play “The Battle of Prague” on it. The walls of all the rooms was

plastered, and most had carpets on the floors, and the whole house was whitewashed on the outside.

It was a double house, and the big open place betwixt them was roofed and floored, and sometimes the table was set there in the middle of the day, and it was a cool, comfortable place. Nothing couldn't be better. And warn't the cooking good, and just bushels of it too!

Chapter XVIII

COL. GRANGERFORD was a gentleman, you see. He was a gentleman all over; and so was his family. He was well born, as the saying is, and that's worth as much in a man as it is in a horse, so the Widow Douglas said, and nobody ever denied that she was of the first aristocracy in our town; and pap he always said it, too, though he warn't no more quality than a mudcat himself. Col. Grangerford was very tall and very slim, and had a darkish-paly complexion, not a sign of red in it anywheres; he was clean shaved every morning all over his thin face, and he had the thinnest kind of lips, and the thinnest kind of nostrils, and a high nose, and heavy eyebrows, and the blackest kind of eyes, sunk so deep back that they seemed like they was looking out of caverns at you, as you may say. His forehead was high, and his hair was black and straight and hung to his shoulders. His hands was long and thin, and every day of his life he put on a clean shirt and a full suit from head to foot made out of linen so white it hurt your eyes to look at it; and on Sundays he wore a blue tail-coat with brass buttons on it. He carried a mahogany cane with a silver head to it. There warn't no frivolishness about him, not a bit, and he warn't ever loud. He was as kind as he could be—you could feel that, you know, and so you had confidence. Sometimes he smiled, and it was good to see; but when he straightened himself up like a liberty-pole, and the lightning begun to flicker out from under his eyebrows, you wanted to climb a tree first, and find out what the matter was afterwards. He didn't ever have to tell anybody to mind their manners —everybody was always good-mannered where he was. Everybody loved to have him around, too; he was sunshine most always—I mean he made it seem like good weather. When he turned into a cloudbank it was awful dark for

half a minute, and that was enough; there wouldn't nothing go wrong again for a week.

When him and the old lady come down in the morning all the family got up out of their chairs and give them good-day, and didn't set down again till they had set down. Then Tom and Bob went to the sideboard where the decanter was, and mixed a glass of bitters and handed it to him, and he held it in his hand and waited till Tom's and Bob's was mixed, and then they bowed and said, "Our duty to you, sir, and madam;" and THEY bowed the least bit in the world and said thank you, and so they drank, all three, and Bob and Tom poured a spoonful of water on the sugar and the mite of whisky or apple brandy in the bottom of their tumblers, and give it to me and Buck, and we drank to the old people too.

Bob was the oldest and Tom next—tall, beautiful men with very broad shoulders and brown faces, and long black hair and black eyes. They dressed in white linen from head to foot, like the old gentleman, and wore broad Panama hats.

Then there was Miss Charlotte; she was twenty-five, and tall and proud and grand, but as good as she could be when she warn't stirred up; but when she was she had a look that would make you wilt in your tracks, like her father. She was beautiful.

So was her sister, Miss Sophia, but it was a different kind. She was gentle and sweet like a dove, and she was only twenty.

Each person had their own nigger to wait on them—Buck too. My nigger had a monstrous easy time, because I warn't used to having anybody do anything for me, but Buck's was on the jump most of the time.

This was all there was of the family now, but there used to be more —three sons; they got killed; and Emmeline that died.

The old gentleman owned a lot of farms and over a hundred niggers. Sometimes a stack of people would come there, horseback, from ten or fifteen mile around, and stay five or six days, and have such junketings round about and on the river, and dances and picnics in the woods daytimes, and balls at the house nights. These people was mostly

kinfolks of the family. The men brought their guns with them. It was a handsome lot of quality, I tell you.

There was another clan of aristocracy around there—five or six families —mostly of the name of Shepherdson. They was as high-toned and well born and rich and grand as the tribe of Grangerfords. The Shepherdsons and Grangerfords used the same steamboat landing, which was about two mile above our house; so sometimes when I went up there with a lot of our folks I used to see a lot of the Shepherdsons there on their fine horses.

One day Buck and me was away out in the woods hunting, and heard a horse coming. We was crossing the road. Buck says:

"Quick! Jump for the woods!"

We done it, and then peeped down the woods through the leaves. Pretty soon a splendid young man come galloping down the road, setting his horse easy and looking like a soldier. He had his gun across his pommel. I had seen him before. It was young Harney Shepherdson. I heard Buck's gun go off at my ear, and Harney's hat tumbled off from his head. He grabbed his gun and rode straight to the place where we was hid. But we didn't wait. We started through the woods on a run. The woods warn't thick, so I looked over my shoulder to dodge the bullet, and twice I seen Harney cover Buck with his gun; and then he rode away the way he come—to get his hat, I reckon, but I couldn't see. We never stopped running till we got home. The old gentleman's eyes blazed a minute—'twas pleasure, mainly, I judged—then his face sort of smoothed down, and he says, kind of gentle:

"I don't like that shooting from behind a bush. Why didn't you step into the road, my boy?"

"The Shepherdsons don't, father. They always take advantage."

Miss Charlotte she held her head up like a queen while Buck was telling his tale, and her nostrils spread and her eyes snapped. The two young men looked dark, but never said nothing. Miss Sophia she turned pale, but the color come back when she found the man warn't hurt.

Soon as I could get Buck down by the corn-cribs under the trees by ourselves, I says:

"Did you want to kill him, Buck?"

“Well, I bet I did.”

“What did he do to you?”

“Him? He never done nothing to me.”

“Well, then, what did you want to kill him for?”

“Why, nothing—only it’s on account of the feud.”

“What’s a feud?”

“Why, where was you raised? Don’t you know what a feud is?”

“Never heard of it before—tell me about it.”

“Well,” says Buck, “a feud is this way: A man has a quarrel with another man, and kills him; then that other man’s brother kills HIM; then the other brothers, on both sides, goes for one another; then the COUSINS chip in—and by and by everybody’s killed off, and there ain’t no more feud. But it’s kind of slow, and takes a long time.”

“Has this one been going on long, Buck?”

“Well, I should RECKON! It started thirty year ago, or som’ers along there. There was trouble ‘bout something, and then a lawsuit to settle it; and the suit went agin one of the men, and so he up and shot the man that won the suit—which he would naturally do, of course. Anybody would.”

“What was the trouble about, Buck?—land?”

“I reckon maybe—I don’t know.”

“Well, who done the shooting? Was it a Grangerford or a Shepherdson?”

“Laws, how do I know? It was so long ago.”

“Don’t anybody know?”

“Oh, yes, pa knows, I reckon, and some of the other old people; but they don’t know now what the row was about in the first place.”

“Has there been many killed, Buck?”

“Yes; right smart chance of funerals. But they don’t always kill. Pa’s got a few buckshot in him; but he don’t mind it ‘cuz he don’t weigh much, anyway. Bob’s been carved up some with a bowie, and Tom’s been hurt once or twice.”

“Has anybody been killed this year, Buck?”

“Yes; we got one and they got one. ‘Bout three months ago my cousin Bud, fourteen year old, was riding through the woods on t’other

side of the river, and didn't have no weapon with him, which was blame' foolishness, and in a lonesome place he hears a horse a-coming behind him, and sees old Baldy Shepherdson a-linkin' after him with his gun in his hand and his white hair a-flying in the wind; and 'stead of jumping off and taking to the brush, Bud 'lowed he could out-run him; so they had it, nip and tuck, for five mile or more, the old man a-gaining all the time; so at last Bud seen it warn't any use, so he stopped and faced around so as to have the bullet holes in front, you know, and the old man he rode up and shot him down. But he didn't git much chance to enjoy his luck, for inside of a week our folks laid HIM out."

"I reckon that old man was a coward, Buck."

"I reckon he WARN'T a coward. Not by a blame' sight. There ain't a coward amongst them Shepherdsons—not a one. And there ain't no cowards amongst the Grangerfords either. Why, that old man kep' up his end in a fight one day for half an hour against three Grangerfords, and come out winner. They was all a-horseback; he lit off of his horse and got behind a little woodpile, and kep' his horse before him to stop the bullets; but the Grangerfords stayed on their horses and capered around the old man, and peppered away at him, and he peppered away at them. Him and his horse both went home pretty leaky and crippled, but the Grangerfords had to be FETCHED home—and one of 'em was dead, and another died the next day. No, sir; if a body's out hunting for cowards he don't want to fool away any time amongst them Shepherdsons, becuz they don't breed any of that KIND."

Next Sunday we all went to church, about three mile, everybody a-horseback. The men took their guns along, so did Buck, and kept them between their knees or stood them handy against the wall. The Shepherdsons done the same. It was pretty ornery preaching—all about brotherly love, and such-like tiresomeness; but everybody said it was a good sermon, and they all talked it over going home, and had such a powerful lot to say about faith and good works and free grace and preforeordestination, and I don't know what all, that it did seem to me to be one of the roughest Sundays I had run across yet.

About an hour after dinner everybody was dozing around, some in their chairs and some in their rooms, and it got to be pretty dull. Buck

and a dog was stretched out on the grass in the sun sound asleep. I went up to our room, and judged I would take a nap myself. I found that sweet Miss Sophia standing in her door, which was next to ours, and she took me in her room and shut the door very soft, and asked me if I liked her, and I said I did; and she asked me if I would do something for her and not tell anybody, and I said I would. Then she said she'd forgot her Testament, and left it in the seat at church between two other books, and would I slip out quiet and go there and fetch it to her, and not say nothing to nobody. I said I would. So I slid out and slipped off up the road, and there warn't anybody at the church, except maybe a hog or two, for there warn't any lock on the door, and hogs likes a puncheon floor in summer-time because it's cool. If you notice, most folks don't go to church only when they've got to; but a hog is different.

Says I to myself, something's up; it ain't natural for a girl to be in such a sweat about a Testament. So I give it a shake, and out drops a little piece of paper with "HALF-PAST TWO" wrote on it with a pencil. I ransacked it, but couldn't find anything else. I couldn't make anything out of that, so I put the paper in the book again, and when I got home and upstairs there was Miss Sophia in her door waiting for me. She pulled me in and shut the door; then she looked in the Testament till she found the paper, and as soon as she read it she looked glad; and before a body could think she grabbed me and give me a squeeze, and said I was the best boy in the world, and not to tell anybody. She was mighty red in the face for a minute, and her eyes lighted up, and it made her powerful pretty. I was a good deal astonished, but when I got my breath I asked her what the paper was about, and she asked me if I had read it, and I said no, and she asked me if I could read writing, and I told her "no, only coarse-hand," and then she said the paper warn't anything but a book-mark to keep her place, and I might go and play now.

I went off down to the river, studying over this thing, and pretty soon I noticed that my nigger was following along behind. When we was out of sight of the house he looked back and around a second, and then comes a-running, and says:

"Mars Jawge, if you'll come down into de swamp I'll show you a whole stack o' water-moccasins."

Thinks I, that’s mighty curious; he said that yesterday. He oughter know a body don’t love water-moccasins enough to go around hunting for them. What is he up to, anyway? So I says:

“All right; trot ahead.”

I followed a half a mile; then he struck out over the swamp, and waded ankle deep as much as another half-mile. We come to a little flat piece of land which was dry and very thick with trees and bushes and vines, and he says:

“You shove right in dah jist a few steps, Mars Jawge; dah’s whah dey is. I’s seed ‘m befo’; I don’t k’yer to see ‘em no mo’.”

Then he slopped right along and went away, and pretty soon the trees hid him. I poked into the place a-ways and come to a little open patch as big as a bedroom all hung around with vines, and found a man laying there asleep—and, by jings, it was my old Jim!

I waked him up, and I reckoned it was going to be a grand surprise to him to see me again, but it warn’t. He nearly cried he was so glad, but he warn’t surprised. Said he swum along behind me that night, and heard me yell every time, but dasn’t answer, because he didn’t want nobody to pick HIM up and take him into slavery again. Says he:

“I got hurt a little, en couldn’t swim fas’, so I wuz a considable ways behine you towards de las’; when you landed I reck’ned I could ketch up wid you on de lan’ ‘dout havin’ to shout at you, but when I see dat house I begin to go slow. I ‘uz off too fur to hear what dey say to you—I wuz ‘fraid o’ de dogs; but when it ‘uz all quiet agin I knowed you’s in de house, so I struck out for de woods to wait for day. Early in de mawnin’ some er de niggers come along, gwyne to de fields, en dey tuk me en showed me dis place, whah de dogs can’t track me on accounts o’ de water, en dey brings me truck to eat every night, en tells me how you’s a-gitt’n along.”

“Why didn’t you tell my Jack to fetch me here sooner, Jim?”

“Well, ‘twarn’t no use to ‘sturb you, Huck, tell we could do sumfn—but we’s all right now. I ben a-buyin’ pots en pans en vittles, as I got a chanst, en a-patchin’ up de raf’ nights when—”

“WHAT raft, Jim?”

“Our ole raf’.”

“You mean to say our old raft warn’t smashed all to flinders?”

“No, she warn’t. She was tore up a good deal—one en’ of her was; but dey warn’t no great harm done, on’y our traps was mos’ all los’. Ef we hadn’ dive’ so deep en swum so fur under water, en de night hadn’ ben so dark, en we warn’t so sk’yerd, en ben sich punkin-heads, as de sayin’ is, we’d a seed de raf’. But it’s jis’ as well we didn’t, ‘kase now she’s all fixed up agin mos’ as good as new, en we’s got a new lot o’ stuff, in de place o’ what ‘uz los’.”

“Why, how did you get hold of the raft again, Jim—did you catch her?”

“How I gwyne to ketch her en I out in de woods? No; some er de niggers foun’ her ketched on a snag along heah in de ben’, en dey hid her in a crick ‘mongst de willows, en dey wuz so much jawin’ ‘bout which un ‘um she b’long to de mos’ dat I come to heah ‘bout it pooty soon, so I ups en settles de trouble by tellin’ ‘um she don’t b’long to none uv um, but to you en me; en I ast ‘m if dey gwyne to grab a young white genlman’s propaty, en git a hid’n for it? Den I gin ‘m ten cents apiece, en dey ‘uz mighty well satisfied, en wisht some mo’ raf’s ‘ud come along en make ‘m rich agin. Dey’s mighty good to me, dese niggers is, en whatever I wants ‘m to do fur me I doan’ have to ast ‘m twice, honey. Dat Jack’s a good nigger, en pooty smart.”

“Yes, he is. He ain’t ever told me you was here; told me to come, and he’d show me a lot of water-moccasins. If anything happens HE ain’t mixed up in it. He can say he never seen us together, and it ‘ll be the truth.”

I don’t want to talk much about the next day. I reckon I’ll cut it pretty short. I waked up about dawn, and was a-going to turn over and go to sleep again when I noticed how still it was—didn’t seem to be anybody stirring. That warn’t usual. Next I noticed that Buck was up and gone. Well, I gets up, a-wondering, and goes down stairs—nobody around; everything as still as a mouse. Just the same outside. Thinks I, what does it mean? Down by the wood-pile I comes across my Jack, and says:

“What’s it all about?”

Says he:

“Don’t you know, Mars Jawge?”

“No,” says I, “I don’t.”

“Well, den, Miss Sophia’s run off! ‘deed she has. She run off in de night some time—nobody don’t know jis’ when; run off to get married to dat young Harney Shepherdson, you know—leastways, so dey ‘spec. De fambly foun’ it out ‘bout half an hour ago—maybe a little mo’—en’ I TELL you dey warn’t no time los’. Sich another hurryin’ up guns en hosses YOU never see! De women folks has gone for to stir up de relations, en ole Mars Saul en de boys tuck dey guns en rode up de river road for to try to ketch dat young man en kill him ‘fo’ he kin git acrost de river wid Miss Sophia. I reck’n dey’s gwyne to be mighty rough times.”

“Buck went off ‘thout waking me up.”

“Well, I reck’n he DID! Dey warn’t gwyne to mix you up in it. Mars Buck he loaded up his gun en ‘lowed he’s gwyne to fetch home a Shepherdson or bust. Well, dey’ll be plenty un ‘m dah, I reck’n, en you bet you he’ll fetch one ef he gits a chanst.”

I took up the river road as hard as I could put. By and by I begin to hear guns a good ways off. When I came in sight of the log store and the woodpile where the steamboats lands I worked along under the trees and brush till I got to a good place, and then I clumb up into the forks of a cottonwood that was out of reach, and watched. There was a wood-rank four foot high a little ways in front of the tree, and first I was going to hide behind that; but maybe it was luckier I didn’t.

There was four or five men cavorting around on their horses in the open place before the log store, cussing and yelling, and trying to get at a couple of young chaps that was behind the wood-rank alongside of the steamboat landing; but they couldn’t come it. Every time one of them showed himself on the river side of the woodpile he got shot at. The two boys was squatting back to back behind the pile, so they could watch both ways.

By and by the men stopped cavorting around and yelling. They started riding towards the store; then up gets one of the boys, draws a steady bead over the wood-rank, and drops one of them out of his saddle. All the men jumped off of their horses and grabbed the hurt one and started to carry him to the store; and that minute the two boys started on

the run. They got half way to the tree I was in before the men noticed. Then the men see them, and jumped on their horses and took out after them. They gained on the boys, but it didn't do no good, the boys had too good a start; they got to the woodpile that was in front of my tree, and slipped in behind it, and so they had the bulge on the men again. One of the boys was Buck, and the other was a slim young chap about nineteen years old.

The men ripped around awhile, and then rode away. As soon as they was out of sight I sung out to Buck and told him. He didn't know what to make of my voice coming out of the tree at first. He was awful surprised. He told me to watch out sharp and let him know when the men come in sight again; said they was up to some devilment or other —wouldn't be gone long. I wished I was out of that tree, but I dasn't come down. Buck begun to cry and rip, and 'lowed that him and his cousin Joe (that was the other young chap) would make up for this day yet. He said his father and his two brothers was killed, and two or three of the enemy. Said the Shepherdsons laid for them in ambush. Buck said his father and brothers ought to waited for their relations—the Shepherdsons was too strong for them. I asked him what was become of young Harney and Miss Sophia. He said they'd got across the river and was safe. I was glad of that; but the way Buck did take on because he didn't manage to kill Harney that day he shot at him—I hain't ever heard anything like it.

All of a sudden, bang! bang! bang! goes three or four guns—the men had slipped around through the woods and come in from behind without their horses! The boys jumped for the river—both of them hurt—and as they swum down the current the men run along the bank shooting at them and singing out, "Kill them, kill them!" It made me so sick I most fell out of the tree. I ain't a-going to tell ALL that happened—it would make me sick again if I was to do that. I wished I hadn't ever come ashore that night to see such things. I ain't ever going to get shut of them—lots of times I dream about them.

I stayed in the tree till it begun to get dark, afraid to come down. Sometimes I heard guns away off in the woods; and twice I seen little gangs of men gallop past the log store with guns; so I reckoned the trouble was still a-going on. I was mighty downhearted; so I made up my

mind I wouldn’t ever go anear that house again, because I reckoned I was to blame, somehow. I judged that that piece of paper meant that Miss Sophia was to meet Harney somewheres at half-past two and run off; and I judged I ought to told her father about that paper and the curious way she acted, and then maybe he would a locked her up, and this awful mess wouldn’t ever happened.

When I got down out of the tree I crept along down the river bank a piece, and found the two bodies laying in the edge of the water, and tugged at them till I got them ashore; then I covered up their faces, and got away as quick as I could. I cried a little when I was covering up Buck’s face, for he was mighty good to me.

It was just dark now. I never went near the house, but struck through the woods and made for the swamp. Jim warn’t on his island, so I tramped off in a hurry for the crick, and crowded through the willows, red-hot to jump aboard and get out of that awful country. The raft was gone! My souls, but I was scared! I couldn’t get my breath for most a minute. Then I raised a yell. A voice not twenty-five foot from me says:

“Good lan’! is dat you, honey? Doan’ make no noise.”

It was Jim’s voice—nothing ever sounded so good before. I run along the bank a piece and got aboard, and Jim he grabbed me and hugged me, he was so glad to see me. He says:

“Laws bless you, chile, I ‘uz right down sho’ you’s dead agin. Jack’s been heah; he say he reck’n you’s ben shot, kase you didn’ come home no mo’; so I’s jes’ dis minute a startin’ de raf’ down towards de mouf er de crick, so’s to be all ready for to shove out en leave soon as Jack comes agin en tells me for certain you IS dead. Lawsy, I’s mighty glad to git you back again, honey.”

I says:

“All right—that’s mighty good; they won’t find me, and they’ll think I’ve been killed, and floated down the river—there’s something up there that ‘ll help them think so—so don’t you lose no time, Jim, but just shove off for the big water as fast as ever you can.”

I never felt easy till the raft was two mile below there and out in the middle of the Mississippi. Then we hung up our signal lantern, and judged that we was free and safe once more. I hadn’t had a bite to eat

since yesterday, so Jim he got out some corn-dodgers and buttermilk, and pork and cabbage and greens—there ain't nothing in the world so good when it's cooked right—and whilst I eat my supper we talked and had a good time. I was powerful glad to get away from the feuds, and so was Jim to get away from the swamp. We said there warn't no home like a raft, after all. Other places do seem so cramped up and smothery, but a raft don't. You feel mighty free and easy and comfortable on a raft.

Chapter XIX

TWO or three days and nights went by; I reckon I might say they swum by, they slid along so quiet and smooth and lovely. Here is the way we put in the time. It was a monstrous big river down there—sometimes a mile and a half wide; we run nights, and laid up and hid daytimes; soon as night was most gone we stopped navigating and tied up—nearly always in the dead water under a towhead; and then cut young cottonwoods and willows, and hid the raft with them. Then we set out the lines. Next we slid into the river and had a swim, so as to freshen up and cool off; then we set down on the sandy bottom where the water was about knee deep, and watched the daylight come. Not a sound anywheres—perfectly still —just like the whole world was asleep, only sometimes the bullfrogs a-cluttering, maybe. The first thing to see, looking away over the water, was a kind of dull line—that was the woods on t'other side; you couldn't make nothing else out; then a pale place in the sky; then more paleness spreading around; then the river softened up away off, and warn't black any more, but gray; you could see little dark spots drifting along ever so far away—trading scows, and such things; and long black streaks —rafts; sometimes you could hear a sweep screaking; or jumbled up voices, it was so still, and sounds come so far; and by and by you could see a streak on the water which you know by the look of the streak that there's a snag there in a swift current which breaks on it and makes that streak look that way; and you see the mist curl up off of the water, and the east reddens up, and the river, and you make out a log-cabin in the edge of the woods, away on the bank on t'other side of the river, being a woodyard, likely, and piled by them

骗子所以你可以扔掉一只狗，通过它，无论哪里；然后漂亮的风
泉了，来煽动你从那边，太酷了，新鲜的和
甜的气味的木和花，但有时候
不是这样，因为他们已经离开了死鱼周围铺设，地质学和这样的，
和他们做得到相当的排名；以及接下来你已经得到了整天，
一切都在微笑太阳的歌鸟只要它！

一个小烟不可能是注意到了，所以我们将采取一些鱼
行和煮了早餐。 之后我们将
看lonesomeness的河流，和种类的懒散，通过并
由懒睡着。 醒来通过和通过，并期待看到什么这样做，
也许看到一个汽船咳嗽着了流，迄今已走向
另一边，你不能告诉任何关于她的只有她是否是一个
严厉的轮或侧面的轮；然后大约一个小时就不会
什么都没听到，也没有什么好看的—只是固体lonesomeness. 下次你会
看到一个木筏滑，走那边，也许一个傻瓜在它
砍的，因为他们最终做一个木筏，你会看到的
斧头闪光灯下来—你没有听到什么，你看到那个斧头去
了，和通过时间是上述的男子的头部然后，你听到
K'CHUNK!—它已采取了所有的时间过来的水。 因此，我们
将在一天，抽身，听寂静。 一旦
有一个浓雾和筏子，事情过去了打
锡平底锅那么的汽船不会跑不过他们。 一个平底船或筏去
由如此靠近我们可以听到他们说话，咒骂和笑—听到了
他们的平原，但我们不能看不到他们的标志，它使你感觉痒痒;
它是这样的精神进行的方式在空气中。 吉姆说，他认为这
是精神，但我说：

"没有灵魂不会说，'邓恩的邓恩雾。'"

很快的，因为它是夜晚我们猛；当我们得到了她的出有关
中间我们让她一个人，并让她浮在目前希望她
要；然后我们点燃的管道，把我们的双腿在水，并谈到
有关各种事情的—我们总是赤裸裸的，一天一夜，
只要蚊子会让我们的新衣服巴克的乡亲们
为我做的太好很舒服，而且我没有去
上衣服。

有时候我们就会有整个河的所有要为自己的最长
时间。 那边的是该银行和该群岛，跨越的水；以及或许
一个火花--这是一个蜡烛在一个船舱的窗口；而有时在
水，你可以看到火花或两个木筏上的或一个平底船，你知道，
也许你可以听到一个小提琴或一首歌来自一个他们的
工艺品。 这是可爱的生活在一个木筏。 我们的天空在那里，所有斑点
的星星，我们用来放在我们的背上并期待他们，并
讨论有关它们是否是或者仅仅只是发生了。 吉姆，他
允许他们了，但我让它们发生；我判断，它将会
有花了太长时间做这么多。 吉姆说月亮会一规定
；以及，看起来的那种合理的，因此我没有说什么反对
它，因为我已经看过一只青蛙奠定最多，所以当然可以
完成。 我们曾看着星星，下降了，也看到它们的条纹下来。
吉姆允许他们会得到宠坏了，是霍夫出巢。

一次或两次的夜晚我们将会看到一个汽船滑倒在
黑暗中，现在，然后她会打嗝一个整个世界的火花了
她的chimbleys，他们会下雨下在河边看起来
太可怕了漂亮的；然后她会变成一个角落里和她的灯会眨眼了
她的巫师关闭和离开该河仍然再次；以及通过和
她浪就会找到我们，长时间之后她走了， 和啮合扣的
木筏一点，并在这之后你就不会听到什么你不能告诉
多长时间，也许除了青蛙或东西。

午夜之后的人在岸上去到床上，然后用于两个或
三个小时岸是黑色的—没有更多的火花在船舱窗户。
这些火花是我们的时钟--第一个，再次表明的意思是
早上的到来，使我们猎杀一个隐藏的地方和领带的时候了。

一天早上关于黎明时我找到了独木舟越过一个
斜槽，主要的岸边—这只是两个百码和划
大约一英里的一个克里克之间的柏树林里,看看如果我不能
获得一些浆果。 只是因为我路过的地方的一种cowpath
过了克里克，这里来了一对夫妇的男子撕毁路径作为紧
，因为他们可以英尺。 我想我是完了,每当有人
之后的任何人我判断这是我的—或者吉姆。 我正要挖出来
从那里赶时间，但他们是非常接近我，然后，并演唱了
求我救他们的生活—说他们没有做什么，

而是被追赶它的所有男子和狗的一个。
他们想跳杈，但我说：

"你不做它。 我听到的不是狗，马，你有
时间的人群中通过的刷，并得到了克里克的一个小小的地方；然后
你拿到水和下韦德，我在这就会把
狗掉气味。"

他们这样做，只要他们是乘坐我点燃了我们的towhead,
并在大约五分钟或十分钟，我们听到了狗的男人远关闭，
大声喊叫。 我们听到他们走向克里克，但看不到
他们；他们似乎停止和傻子围绕一个话；然后，作为我们得到了
进一步和进一步走的时候，我们不可能几乎听不到他们在所有
的时候，我们留下了一英里的树林里我们后面袭击的河流，
一切都很安静，我们划到towhead藏在
白杨和安全。

这些研究员是大约七十岁或以上，有一个秃
头的和非常的灰色的胡须。 他有一个破旧的-起来没精打采的帽子，
和油腻的蓝色的羊毛衬衫，衣衫褴褛的老蓝色牛仔裤裤子
塞进他的引导-的上衣和家庭织galluses—不，他只有一个。
他有一个古老的长尾的蓝色牛仔裤涂上光滑的铜钮扣甩
了他的手臂和他们两个有很大的肥老鼠-看地毯-袋。

其他的同胞是大约三十岁，身着关于如故意刁难的. 后
早餐，我们所有裁谈及的第一件事情说出来的是
这些家伙不知道另一个。

"是什么让你陷入麻烦？说："秃头t'other第一章。

"好吧，我会卖一条采取的牙掉的牙齿—
它不会把它关闭，过，generly搪瓷随着它—但我
大约一个晚上的时间比我应该，而且只是在该法的滑
出来的时候我遇到了你在路的这一边城镇，你告诉我
他们是来，求我帮你得到。 所以我告诉过你我
是会有麻烦自己，并且会分散了你。 这就是
整个纱—什么花你的钱呢?

"嗯，我想奔一个运行'一个小节制的复兴塔尔布特的一
周，并且是宠物的妇女人，大大小小的，因为我是
你让它强大的温暖的rummies，我告诉你，和我一样多
为五个或六块钱一个晚上—十块钱一头儿童和黑奴

免费的和商业的一个-慢慢生长的所有时间，当以某种方式或另一个小小的报告得到了周围，昨晚我有办法的puttin'在我的时间与私人罐子的狡猾。 一个黑鬼吵醒她我这个早上，告诉我的人民是getherin'在宁静与他们的狗，马，他们会很快给我半小时开始，然后我跑下来如果他们能；以及如果他们得到我他们会的焦油和羽毛我和我骑在一个轨道，肯定的。 我没有等于没有早餐—我警告不饿。"

"老男人说，"年轻的一个，"我想我们可能会双团队在一起；你怎么想?"

"我是不是未释放的. 你有什么线—主要?"

"Jour打印机通过贸易；以做一个小小的专利药物；戏剧演员悲剧，你知道，采取一把催眠术和骨相当有一个机会；教唱歌-地理学变化；吊一个讲座有时是—哦，我做很多事—任何事情都来得心应手，所以它不是工作。 你有什么打下?"

"我已经做了considerble中的篡改办法在我的时间。 躺在o'双手是我最好的霍特—癌症和瘫痪，以及sich的事情；以及我k'n告诉了一笔相当好的时候我已经有人沿着找出的事实对我来说。 Preachin是我的线，并在营地-高兴认识，并missionaryin'。"

没有人从来没有说过任何一段时间；然后年轻的男人霍夫一个叹息说：

"唉！"

"什么're你alassin什么?说："秃头

"觉得我应该有的生活领导这样的生活，并能降落到这样的公司。" 和他开始抹角，他的眼一抹布。

"邓恩你的皮肤不是公司良好的足够了吗? "说的秃头，漂亮的计划评审技术和uppish.

"是的，它是对我来说不够好；这是因为好为我值得；对谁获取我这么低的时候我是那么的高? 我做了我自己。 我不怪你，先生们—远非如此；我并不怪任何人。 我应该得到这一切。 让冰冷的世界做的最糟糕的；一件事我知道—有一个严重的某个地方对我来说。 世界可能只是因为它是一直这样做，并采取

一切都从我的亲人、财产、一切，但它不能采取
。 有一天我会躺在这及忘记这一切，我可怜的破
心将在其余部分。" 他去一个-擦。

"Drot你孔破碎的心说，"秃头；"什么是你
胀你孔破碎的心在我们f'r? 我们的海恩不做什么。"

"不，我知道你没有。 我不是责怪你，先生们。 我带来
我自己下来—是的，我没有它自己。 它是对的，我应该遭受—完全
正确—我不要做任何的抱怨."

"给你带了下来，从总是什么忙也带? 总是什么忙也带是你带来了？ "

"啊，你不会相信我的世界永远不会相信—让它通过
—这是没有问题。 的秘密我的诞生"

"秘密你的出生！ 你的意思是说—"

"先生们，"年轻人说，非常严肃的，"我将会揭示它的
你，我感觉我可以有信心在你的。 由的权利我是一个公爵!"

吉姆的眼睛窃听时，他听到了这一点；我想我做到了，
太。 那么秃头说："没有！ 你不能意味着它?"

"是的。 我的曾祖父，大儿子的公爵Bridgewater，
逃到这个国家关于结束上个世纪，呼吸纯净的
空气自由;在这里结婚和死亡，留下一个儿子，他自己的父亲
死亡的大约同一时间。 第二个儿子的晚杜克缴获的
标题和屋—婴儿实公爵是被忽略。 我的直系
后代，婴儿—我应有的公爵Bridgewater；和
我在这里，孤独，撕裂我的高产、猎杀的男人、鄙视通过
寒冷的世界里，衣衫褴褛，磨损、心碎了，退化的
伴侣的重犯在一个木筏!"

可怜的吉姆他曾经那样多，所以没有I.我们试图安慰他，
但他说，这一警告没有多大用处，他不能多的安慰；所说的，如果
我们想确认他将做他更好的比
大多数其他任何东西；因此，我们说我们会的，如果他会告诉我们如何。 他
说我们应该鞠躬当我们谈到了他，并说"你的恩典，"或者
"我的主人"或"老爷"—他不会介意如果我们叫
他纯"Bridgewater，"其中，他说，是一个标题，无论如何，没有一个
名字；以及一个我们应该等待他在晚餐和做任何小
事情他他想要的完成。

嗯，这是容易的，所以我们做它。 所有通过晚饭Jim站
周围以及等待在他身上，并说，"将你的恩典有一些o'综合安全分遣队或
一些o'dat吗？ "，那么，和一个机构可以看到它是强大的喜悦
他。

但老人得到了相当沉默，并通过—没有太多的来
说，并没有看起来很舒适的超过所有的宠爱，是
去周围的公爵。 他似乎有什么东西在他的脑海。
因此，在下午，他说：

"听我说，毕奇华特，"他说，"我国对不起你，但是
你是不是唯一一个有麻烦的那样。"

"没有？ "

"不，你不是。 你不是唯一的人的本蜿蜒下
错了一个'n'高的地方。"

"唉！ "

"不，你不是唯一的人，有一个秘密的他的出生地。" 而且，
通过jings，他开始哭了起来。

"！ 你什么意思？ "

"毕奇华特,坚我相信你?说："老人，仍啜泣。

"来痛苦的死亡！" 他把老人的手被挤
它说，"这个秘密你是说!"

"毕奇华特，我已故多芬!"

你赌了你，杰姆和我盯着这个时候。 那么公爵说：

"你是什么？ "

"是的，我的朋友，这太过真的—你的眼睛是看着这个非常
时刻在孔消失Dauphin,Looy的十七岁的儿子
Looy的十六岁结婚Antonette."

"你！ 在你的年龄！ 不！ 你的意思是你是晚了查理的；你
必须六个或七百年古老的，在非常少。"

"麻烦已经做到了，毕奇华特，麻烦已经完成；麻烦已经
带这些灰色头发和这一过早的balditude. 是的，先生们，你
看看在你面前，在蓝色牛仔裤和苦难，wanderin'，流亡，践踏-
上，sufferin'应有的法国国王。"

嗯，他哭着了所以我和吉姆不知道几乎没有
做什么，我们很抱歉—这样很高兴和自豪，我们会抓到他与
我们,也是。 所以我们，像我们以前做过的杜克，并试图

安慰他。 但他说，这一警告没有使用，没有什么但是要死了，用它做所有可以做他的任何良好；但他说，这往往使他感到更容易和更好一段时间如果人民处理他根据他的权利，并得到了一个膝盖上跟他讲话，总是称他为"陛下，"并等待在他第一次吃饭时，并没有定下在他的存在直到他要求他们。 所以吉姆和我设置majestying他，这样做的，这和t'other他，站起来，直到他告诉我们，我们可以设置下来。 这样做他堆不错，因此他得到了快乐和舒适。 但公爵样的恶化在他身上，并没有看起来一点感到满意的方式事会；还有，国王采取行动真正的友好向他，并说公爵的伟大的曾祖父和所有其他公爵的毕奇华特是一个很好的理想通过他的父亲，允许来到宫相当大的；但公爵呆赫菲的一个良好而，直到通过并由国王说：

"像作为不我们得一起归咎于长时间在这个h-啊筏，毕奇华特，什么使用o'你做酸奶？ It'll只能使事情oncomfortable. 这不是我的错我警告不出生在一个公爵，它不是你的错你提醒不出生在一个国王—那么，有什么用担心？ 做的最好的o'的东西你找到他们，我说的—这是我的座右铭。 这不是坏事，我们已经袭击了这里很多吃的和一个简单的生活—来吧，给我你的手，杜克，并le的所有朋友。"

杜克这样做，吉姆和我是很高兴看到它。 它拿走的所有压抑我们的感觉太好了，因为它将一直是一个悲惨的业务有任何不友好的筏；对于你想要什么，上述所有事情，在一个木筏，是每个人都能满足，以及感觉和一种对其他人。

它没多久我要让我的心灵，这些说谎的警告没有国王，也不是公爵所有，但只是低下humbugs和欺诈行为。 但我从来没有说什么，永远不会让；保持它自己；它是最好的方式；然后您没有没有争吵，没有得到任何麻烦。 如果他们想要我们呼叫他们的国王和公爵，我没有人反对，长，因为它将保持在家庭中的和平；以及它警告不告诉吉姆，所以我没告诉他。 如果我永远不会学到什么，别出来的子宫颈的，我了解到，最好的办法得到与他的样的人是为了让他们有他们自己的方式。

第二十章

他们要求我们大量的许多问题，想知道什么我们
复盖上的木筏这种方式，并奠定了通过在白天，而不是
运行—是吉姆一个逃亡的黑鬼？ 我说:

"善良的缘故！ 将一个逃亡的黑奴运行的南方吗？"

不，他们允许他不会的。 我已经考虑到一些事情的方式，
所以我说：

"我的父母是住在派克县，在密苏里，我在那里出生的，
他们都死掉但是我爸和我弟弟艾克。 爸，他的
他想破坏，并深入和生活本叔叔，他有一个小
马的地方河上，第四十四英里下面的新奥尔良。 Pa是
很差，有一些债务；这样的时候他就会平方在那里提出警告不
留下什么，但十六美元和我们的黑人，吉姆。 警告不够
采取我们一千四百英里，甲板上的通道，也没有其他办法。 嗯，
当河水上涨pa有一条幸运的一天；他ketched这片
的筏；所以我们估计我们要去奥尔良。 巴勒斯坦权力机构的运气没有
举出来；一个汽船运过forrard角落的木筏一天晚上，
我们所有去过的鸽子在车轮下;吉姆和我去
了所有的权利，但pa是喝醉了，和"艾克"只有四岁，因此他们
永远不会来了没有更多。 好了，下一个两天我们有了
相当大的麻烦，因为人们总是走出在小船
，并试图采取吉姆离开我，说他们认为他是一个
逃亡黑奴。 我们不运行白天没有更多现在夜晚他们不要
打扰我们。"

公爵说：

"留下我一个人到密码了一种方法，以便我们可以在白天运行，如果
我们想要的。 我会想的事情—我会发明一种计划，该计划将解决它。 我们会
让它单独为天，当然，因为我们不想去的那个
镇那边的白天—它可能不健康。"

对晚开始变黑了，看起来像雨；热
闪电喷射周围的低下，在天空，叶子
开始发抖—这会是很丑陋，我们很容易看到
的。 所以公爵和国王去彻底改革我们的窝棚，看到
什么样的床。 我的床是个草勾比吉姆的，

是一个玉米壳勾；有总是棒子周围大约在一个壳剔，他们捅到你和伤害；以及当你滚过干胡说喜欢你的声音是轧制在一大堆枯叶的；它使得这样的沙沙声，你醒来。 好了，公爵允许他会把我的床；但是，国王允许他不会的。 他说：

"我应该忽视的差异秩会sejested到你这玉米是弹簧床警告不仅fitten为我要睡眠。 你的恩典'll采取的是弹簧床你自己。"

吉姆和我是在流汗再一分钟，害怕没有将一些更多的麻烦，他们当中；所以我们很高兴当公爵说：

"这是我的命运总是被磨成了泥潭下的铁脚跟的压迫。 不幸已经打破了我的一次高傲的精神；我屈服，我提交；这是我的命运。 我独自在的世界让我遭受的；可以承担。"

我们走，只要它是好的和黑暗。 国王告诉我们的立场以及对河中间，并没有显示出光，直到我们得到了一个长期的方式低于城镇。 我们在看小堆灯光的通过和通过—那是镇上，你知道和下滑，大约半英里了，所有的权利。 当我们三个四分之一英里下面我们悬挂我们的信号灯；约十点钟过来上下雨吹和雷和减轻喜欢的一切；因此国王告诉我们两个留在看到的天气变得更好；然后他和杜克爬进入棚屋，并拒绝在夜。 这是我手下直到十二个，但是我不会打开，无论如何如果我有一张床，因为一体看不到这样的风暴，因为每一天的一周，不通过一个长期的视线。 我的灵魂，如何风声尖叫！ 每第二个或两个有这么一个强光，照亮了白帽一个半英里左右，你会看到该群岛在找尘土飞扬通过雨，并树上颠簸在风；然后是一个H-嗷!—屁股！ 屁股！ 大黄蜂umble-嗯-bum-bum-bum-bum—和雷要去隆隆和抱怨走，和放弃—然后RIP来的另一个闪光灯和另一个sockdolager. 波多数用我的筏子的时候，但是我没有任何衣服上的，并没有头脑。 我们没有麻烦，有关障碍；闪电是明显的，

飞来飞去周围所以恒，我们可以看到他们足够很快
把她的头这样或那样，错过他们。

我不得不中看,你知道,但我很困，通过
时间，所以吉姆，他说他会站在第一半的这对我来说，他是
总是强大的很好的那样，吉姆。 我爬到的窝棚，但
国王和公爵了他们的腿趴周围的所有警告没有
显示对于我，所以我之外布设的—我不介意的降雨，因为它是
温和浪警告不跑这么高了。 大约两他们来
了，不过，吉姆打电话给我，但是他改变了他的想法，
因为他认为他们警告不够高尚未做任何伤害，但他
弄错了，很快突然来了一个
定期开膛手和我洗过分。 它最杀了吉姆-笑。
他是最简单的黑鬼笑，永远是，无论如何。

我把手表，而吉姆他放下并打鼾的距离；和通过和
通过暴风雨我们最好和所有；以及第一舱-光这表明
我叫起他，并且我们滑到筏子躲藏季的一天。

国王离开了一个旧破烂的牌早餐后，他
和杜克大学发挥了七个同时，五美分，一个游戏。 然后他们
厌倦了它，并允许他们将"奠定了一个运动，"因为他们叫
它。 公爵去到他的地毯袋，并提取了很小的
印刷钞票读出声来。 一个bill说，"着名的博士
阿尔芒德蒙塔尔万，巴黎，"将"的演讲上学的
骨相"在这样一个地方，在空白天的空白，在十
分接纳，而"提供的图表字在第二十五美分，
每人。" 公爵所说的，是他。 在另一案，他是"世界
闻名的莎士比亚的悲剧，加里克的年轻的德鲁道，
伦敦。" 在其他票据，他有很多其他名称和做其他的
奇妙的事情，比如寻找水和金"占卜棒,"
"散的女巫术，"等。 通过和他说：

"但是戏剧性的缪斯女神是的亲爱的。 你有没有踩的
板，费?"

"没有，说："国王。

"你应，然后，之前，你三天旧的、堕落的宏伟，"
说公爵。 "第一个好的小镇我们来到我们会聘请一个大厅做

剑战斗在理查德三。 和阳台场景在罗密欧和
朱丽叶。 怎么打击你吗？"

"我在，直至枢纽，对于任何将支付，毕奇华特；但是，
你看，我不知道什么玩-现和海恩没见过
多。 我太小时pap用他们在宫。 做
你认为你可以学我吗？"

"容易的！"

"所有的权利。 我的脸谱了-freezn'对于一些新鲜的东西，反正。 Le的
开始的时候了。"

所以公爵他告诉了他所有关于谁是罗密欧和朱丽叶是谁
是的，他说他用的是罗密欧，所以国王可能是朱丽叶.

"但是，如果朱丽叶这样一个年轻的姑娘，公爵，我剥离的头和我的白色
胡须是去看看oncommon奇她，也许。"

"不，你不用担心；这些国家的杰克斯永远不会想到这一点。
此外，你知道，你会在服装，这使得所有
差异的世界，朱丽叶在阳台，享受着月光下
之前她去睡觉了，她得到了她的晚礼服和她的竖起
睡帽。 这里的服装的部件。"

他得到了两个或三个窗帘-印花布诉讼，这是他说的是
meedyevil装甲理查德三。 t'other第一章，一个长长的白
棉睡衣和一个褶边的睡前饮料相匹配。 国王很满意，
所以公爵了他的图书和阅读部分在最灿烂的
扩鹰的方式，腾跃的周围和作用的同时，以显示
它如何已经有工作要做，然后他给书的国王，并告诉他
让他的部分。

有一点点-马镇大约三英里向下弯曲，
晚饭后的公爵说，他已经加密了他的想法如何
运行在白天没有它正在dangersome吉姆；因此，他允许他
会去镇和解决这件事。 国王允许他
会去的，也是，看看如果他不能罢工的东西。 我们的
咖啡，所以吉姆说我最好去与他们一起在独木舟，并得到一些。

当我们到了那里有警告，没有人能搅拌；街道上空，并
完全死了，并仍然喜欢星期天。 我们发现了一个生病的黑鬼晒太阳
自己的后院，他说大家都警告不太年轻，或者
也生病或太老了到营地会议，有关两英里回来的

树林。 国王得到了方向，并允许他去工作，
营地会议的所有是值得的，并且我可能会去,也是。

公爵说了什么他是后是印刷办公室。 我们找到它；有一
点点的关注，在一个木匠店—木匠和打印机
都没了的会议，并且没有的门锁。 这是一个肮脏的，充斥了
地方，并有墨水的痕迹，并传单的照片马和
逃亡黑奴在他们身上，所有的墙壁。 公爵摆脱了他的外套和
他说是所有权利。 所以我和国王点燃为营地-
的会议。

我们到了那里，在大约一个半小时，相当滴，因为它是一个最
可怕的炎热的一天。 有一万多人没有从
二十一英里左右。 树林中充满的团队和车辆，拴
everywheres，喂食了货车槽和跺脚要保持关
的苍蝇。 有棚做出来的波兰人和屋顶上有
分支机构，在那里他们有柠檬水和姜饼销售，以及成堆的
西瓜和绿玉米和这样的卡车。

传道会在同种类的棚，只有
他们大举行群众的人民。 在长凳被造出来
的外板的记录，与孔无聊的圆侧驱动棍棒
成为双腿。 他们没有没有背。 传教士有很高的
平台站在一端的棚屋。 妇女不得不在太阳
帽子；而一些已经linsey-伍尔西的连衣裙，一些条纹布，而一
些年轻人已经在印花布。 一些年轻的男人
赤脚，一些儿童没有任何衣服，但只是一个
拖车单的衬衫。 一些老的妇女编织和一些
年轻人求婚的狡猾。

第一棚我们来到这个牧师是衬出的赞歌。 他
衬出了两条线，每个人都唱过它，和它是一种大听到，
还有这么多的人和他们做了它在这样一个鼓舞人心的方式；然后
他衬出两个为它们唱歌—等。 人们醒来的时候
更多，并成响；以及对结束某些
经开始呻吟，一些开始喊。 然后牧师经开始
说教，而开始认真，也；和又织第一次向一侧的
平台，然后其他的，然后一个倾倒在前面
，与他的手臂和他的身体将所有的时间，并且呼喊他的

话说出了他所有的可能；和每一个现在和那时他会拿
他的圣经和传播它打开，一种通过它围绕这种方式，
高喊，"这是无耻的蛇在荒野！ 看它和
生活！" 人们会大声喊出，"荣耀！ —一个男人！" 所以他
去了，和人民的呻吟和哭着说阿门:

"哦，来送葬者'台! 进来，黑人有罪。 (阿门！)
来吧，生病和痛！ (阿门！) 来吧，瘸子，并制止和盲！ (阿门！)
来，孔和有需要的人，沉没在耻辱！ (A-A-男人！) 来吧，所有的
穿脏和痛苦！ —来一个破碎的精神！ 跟一个
懊悔的心脏！ 在你的衣衫褴褛和罪和灰尘! 水，清洗
是免费的，天堂的门代表开—噢，进入，并在休息！" (A-
A-男人！ 荣耀，荣耀哈利路亚！)

等等。 你不能做出来什么牧师说，
在账户中的喊叫和哭泣。 伙计得了everywheres的
人群，而他们的工作方法只是通过主要力量来送葬者'
板凳上，与泪水顺着他们的脸；以及当所有的
哀悼已经到了那里，以前的长椅的人群，他们唱，并
喊道，并把自己倒在草的，只是疯狂和野生。

好，首先我知道国王了-会，你可以听到他
在你个人；以及接下来他走了-充电到平台上，
牧师，他请求他的发言人，他这样做。 他
告诉他们，他是个海盗是一个海盗的三十年来在印度
洋—和他的船员是减薄了相当大的去年春天在战斗中，
他的家庭现在采取了一些新鲜的人，并感谢
善良，他们被剥夺了昨晚把上岸的一个汽船
没有一分钱，他很高兴；它是blessedest的事情曾经
发生在他身上因为他是变了一个人现在 和快乐的
第一次在他的生活；而且，穷人因为他，他就要启动权利
和工作，他回到印度洋，放在他的余生
试图把海盗成真正路径；他可以做得比
其他人熟悉所有的海盗船员在海洋；以及
虽然这将需要他的时间长得没有钱，他
会到那里无论如何， 每次他确信一个海盗，他将
对他说，"你不用感谢我，你不给我任何信贷；它所有
属于他们亲爱的人在Pokeville营次会议上，自然兄弟

和捐助者的竞赛，亲爱的牧师那里，真正的朋友
一个海盗曾经有过！"

然后他抓到泪水，所以没有大家。 然后有人
唱出，"采取立一个收集对他来说，采取了一个集合！" 嗯，一个
半打了一跳做到这一点，但有人唱出，"让他
把帽子！" 然后每个人都说吧，牧师。

所以国王去了所有的人群中与他的帽子擦拭他的
眼睛，并且祝福的人们赞美他们，并感谢他们
正在这样很好可怜的海盗走；和每小时
的最漂亮的那种女孩，与泪水顺着他们的脸颊，
就问问他他会让他们亲吻他记得他
通过；并且他总是做； 和他们中的一些，他拥抱和亲吻如
许多为五个或六倍—他被邀请留一个星期；
每个人都希望他生活在自己的房子，并说他们会认为这
是一种荣誉，但他说这是最后一天的营地-的会议，他
不能没有好处，而且他在流汗，获得印度
洋的权利和去工作上的海盗。

当我们回到筏子和他来计他找到了他
收集了第八十七美元和第七十五美分。 然后他
已经拿走三加仑桶的威士忌，他发现了下一个
马车的时候他开始的家庭通过树林。 国王说，
采取这周围的一切，它规定在任何一天他会永远放在
missionarying线。 他说，这一警告没有使用说，异教徒不
量到哪里哪里旁边的海盗工作的一个营地-的会议。

公爵想他已经做得很好，直到国王
来显示，但在那之后，他没有这样觉得的那么多。 他设立了
和印刷掉两个小的工作的农民中，印刷办公室—马
账单和把金钱，四美元。 他已经得到了十美元
价值的广告的文件，该文件，他说，他将把在
四美元，如果他们会提前支付—那么他们这样做。 价格的
该文件是两美元一年，但他参加了三个订阅用于
半个美元的每人条件的人支付他在推进；他们
要支付在cordwood和洋葱像往常一样，但是他说，他
刚刚买了的关注，并撞倒的价格为低，因为他能
承受它，而是要它对现金。 他设立了一小块的

诗，这是他，他自己，自己的头三个诗—
种甜美和saddish—它的名字是，"是的，粉碎，冷的世界，
这破碎的心"—而且他离开所有设置和准备打印在
纸上，并没有充什么。 嗯，他花了九个美元
的一半，并说他要做一个美丽的广场一天的工作。

然后他向我们展示了另一个小的工作他会印制和没收费
用，因为它被用于我们。 它有一个画面的一个逃亡的黑奴带
捆绑在一根棍子在他的肩膀和"200美元的报酬"。 对
读数都是关于吉姆的，只是说他一点。 它说他跑
远从圣雅克林、第四十英里下面的新奥尔良，最后一个
冬天，可能北上，谁能抓住他，送
他回他可能的奖励和费用。

"现在，"公爵说，"之后今晚我们可以在白天运行，如果我们
想要的。 每当我们看到有人来了我们可以配合吉姆的手和脚
用一根绳子,躺在他的帐篷并出示传单，说
我们抓住了他的河流和太差旅行的汽船，
所以我们有这个小小的木筏上的信贷来自我们的朋友和正在下降，
得到的奖励。 手铐和枷锁会更好吉姆，但
它不会去以及与我们的故事是那么差。 太多的喜欢
珠宝首饰。 绳索是正确的事情—我们必须保持统一，如我们
所说的板"。

我们所有的公爵说是相当聪明，就不可能有
麻烦的有关运行白天. 我们判断，我们可以英里足够的
那天晚上出去的达到的巫师我们认为杜克大学的
工作在印刷办公室打算让在那个小镇然后我们
可以繁荣的权利，如果我们想要的。

我们奠定了较低的仍然保持，并且从来没有推出，直到近十
点钟；然后我们下滑，相当广泛的离开该镇，而不是
提升我们的灯笼，直到我们清除出它的视线。

当吉姆叫我带的手表在凌晨四点，他
说：

"哈克,你reck恩我们gwyne运行acrost任何mo'国王在综合安全分遣队
旅行？ "

"不，"我说，"我想不是。"

"嗯，"他说，"dat的所有权利，巢穴。 我doan'我的一个er两个国王，但是dat是不够的。 Dis一个强大的喝醉了,en de公爵ain'多更好。"

我发现吉姆一直试图让他谈谈法国，这样他就可以听见它是什么喜欢，但他说，他已经在这个国家这么久了，有这么大的麻烦，他就会忘了它。

第二十一章

这是之后的太阳，但我们去右上没有领带。 在国王和公爵变成了由以及通过寻找相当的生锈的，但之后他们会跳船，并把游泳它chippered他们良好的交易。 早餐后国王，他采取了一座在角落里的木筏和拉脱他的靴子卷起他的裤子，并让他的腿悬挂在水，以便舒适，并点燃他的管道，去得到他的罗密欧和朱丽叶的心脏。 当他有了很好的他和杜克大学经开始实践中在一起。 公爵必须学习他再怎么说每次演讲；以及他做出了他的叹息，并把他的手放在他的心脏，并在一段时间后，他说，他做得很好，"只有"，他说，"你不能下了罗密欧！ 这样，像公牛的—你必须说它柔软和病和languishy，所以—R-o-o-meo! 就是这个想法；对朱丽叶的一个亲爱的甜蜜单纯的孩子一个女孩，你知道，她不布雷就像一个傻瓜。"

好了，接下来他们得到了几个长剑，公爵做出的橡木板条，以及开始实践的剑—公爵称为自己的理查德三。; 和他们的方式奠定了上又蹦又跳绕着木筏大看到的。 但是通过和国王绊倒摔下船之后，他们把一个休息，并有一谈论所有种类的冒险他们会在其他时候，沿着河。

晚饭后的公爵说：

"好吧，卡佩，我们会想让这个一流表演，你知道，所以我猜我们就会加一点。 我们希望有一个小东西来回答安可，无论如何。"

"什么是onkores，毕奇华特?"

公爵告诉他，然后说：

"我会回答这样做的高地扔或水手的hornpipe; 和
你—好的，让我看看—噢，我知道了—你可以做的哈姆雷特的独白。"

"哈姆雷特是哪个？"

"哈姆雷特的独白，你知道，最着名的事情
莎士比亚。 啊，这是崇高的，崇高的! 总是取的房子。 我
还没有得到它在这本书—我只有一个卷—但我觉得我可以
一块出来的记忆。 我只是走上下一分钟，看看如果
我可以打电话回去的记忆的保管库。"

所以他去游行和下来，思考，并皱着眉头
可怕的每一个现在和以后；然后他将提升他的眉毛；接下来
他会挤压他的手在他的额头上并错开回和种
呻吟；接下来他会叹息，而接下来他会让滴泪。 这是
美看到他。 通过与由他得到了它。 他告诉我们给予注意。
然后，他袭击一个最高贵的姿态，用一条腿猛转发，并且
他的手臂伸距离，并且他的头向后倾斜，仰望
天空，然后他开始偷窃和狂欢和粗砂他的牙齿；以及在此之后，
所有通过他的讲话，他怒吼，和周围扩散，并肿了起来，他的
胸部，只是敲了点出任何表演我看到之前。 这
是语音—我学会了它，很容易，同时他是学习它的
国王：

可以，或者不可以；这是裸锥子，使得灾难这么
长的寿命；对于谁将fardels承担，直到伯纳姆的木头做的来
邓西嫩，但是，恐惧的东西之后死亡的谋杀
无辜的睡眠，伟大的自然第二课程，并使我们而吊
箭头的粗暴的财富于飞到其他人我们不知道。
有的尊重必须得到我们停下：唤醒邓肯与你的
敲门! 我想你；对于谁将承担的皮鞭和
蔑视的时间，压迫者的错误，该自豪的人的侮辱，该
法律的拖延和犹豫不前，其他的痛苦可能采取的死
废料和半夜，当时教堂墓地打哈欠，在习惯
适合的庄严黑色，但未被发现的国家从其
伯恩没有旅客返回，呼吸等传染病的世界上，
因而本地的色调的决议， 就像可怜的猫我'这句格言，是sicklied
o'er与护理，并且所有的云降低o'er我们的屋顶，
这方面他们的潮流又出现偏差，而失去的名字行动。 这是一个

完善虔诚的是希望。 但你轻柔的、公平的奥菲利亚:促进平等事务总理顾问办公室
不是你的沉重和大理石爪，但是你一个尼姑庵去！

好了，老头子，他喜欢讲话，他强大的很快得到了它，使
他能做到这一速度。 它看起来像他刚刚出生的；而当
他有他的手中，很兴奋，这是完全可爱的方式，他
会撕裂和破裂和rair背后当他把它关闭。

第一个机会，我们得到了公爵他有一些showbills印刷；以及
在此之后，两天或三天，因为我们漂浮着木筏是一个最
常见的热闹的地方，还警告不但没有剑和
排练—因为杜克大学称，它正在所有的时间。 一天早晨，
当我们是很好下国家的Arkansaw，我们在视线
的一个小镇马在一个大弯，所以我们绑起来关于三
中的四分之一英里以上，在嘴里克这是关于像
一个隧道通过的柏树，我们所有人的但是吉姆把独木舟
去那里看看是否有任何机会，在那个地方对我们的
表演。

我们击中它强大的幸运；有将是一个马戏团在那里，
下午，和该国人民已经开始进来，在
各种各样的老shackly车和马匹。 马戏团离开
之前夜，所以我们的节目将会有一个很好的机会。 公爵他
聘请的法院，而且我们走卡住了我们的帐单。 他们
阅读这样的：

Shaksperean复兴！ ！！
美妙的吸引力！ 为仅仅一个晚上!

世界着名的悲剧，大卫*加里克的年轻的德鲁
道剧院伦敦和埃德蒙*基恩的老年人，皇家
。剧院、白教堂布丁道，皮卡迪利伦敦和
皇家大陆的剧院，在他们的崇高Shaksperean眼
题为：

阳台场景在罗密欧和朱丽叶!！！

罗密欧...................加里克先生

朱丽叶..................基恩先生

协助整体实力的公司！ 新的服装，新
的场景，新的任命!

还惊心动魄的，巧妙，令人毛骨悚然的广泛的剑
conflictIn理查德三。！! !

理查德三世.............加里克先生
Richmond................基恩先生

还有:(由特别要求)的哈姆雷特是不朽的独白! ! 由
杰出的基恩! 通过他300连住在巴黎！ 一
晚只能，考虑到欧洲必须参与!

入25美分；儿童和公务员，10美分。

然后我们去游手好闲在城里。 商店和房屋是最
所有老shackly，干了框架问题，没有被绘;
他们设立了三个或四英尺以上的地面高跷上，以便可出
的达到的水当河水被过度流动。 该房屋
的小花园周围他们，但他们似乎没有提高几乎没有任何东西
在他们但jimpson-杂草，并向日葵，并灰堆和旧的
卷曲的靴子和鞋子和碎的瓶子和碎布，并发挥出
锡器制. 围栏是由不同种类的板、钉在
不同的时间；以及他们靠各种方法，有的大门，
没有generly只有一个铰链—皮之一。 一些围栏已
经被洗白一些时间，但是公爵所说的，它是在
Clumbus的时间，像不够的。 有generly猪在花园里，
人驾驶他们。

所有的商店，是沿着一条街。 他们有白色国内
篷在前面，和该国人结婚他们马的
棚-员额。 有空drygoods框在遮阳篷，和
懒汉栖息在他们所有一天长，削弱他们与他们的巴洛
刀；以及chawing烟草和大和打哈欠伸—一个

强大的坏脾气很多。 他们generly曾在黄色草帽最为广泛的作为一个保护伞，但没有穿大衣也没有背心，他们称为一个另一项法案，并降压，汉克，乔，安迪，跟懒惰和drawly，并使用相当多的坏话的话。 有许多作为一个无赖靠在每个遮阳篷后，他总是最有他的手在他的裤子口袋，除非当他拿他们出去出嚼烟草或从头开始。 什么一具尸体被听到在他们所有的时间是：

"给我一个嚼'v tobacker，汉克."

"该隐无法；我hain不但是一个嚼离开。 要求比尔"。

也许比尔，他给他一个嚼；也许他的谎言，说他没有没有。 他们中的一些种类的休闲鞋从来没有一个占世界，也不嚼烟草的自己。 他们得到他们所有的chawing通过借款;他们说一个家伙，"我希望你莱恩我是嚼，杰克，我的脸谱这一分钟给本*汤普森的最后一嚼我已经"—这是一个谎言相当多的弹；它不欺骗任何人，但是一个陌生人；但杰克不是陌生人，所以他说：

"你给他一个嚼，你有没有？ 所以没有你妹妹的猫咪的奶奶。 你付钱给我回chaws你awready柏瑞会关'n我，隆辉巴克纳，然后我会借给你的一个或两个吨，并且不会收你没有回信托，nuther."

"嗯，我付钱给你回它的一些wunst."

"是的，你没有—回合的六chaws. 你会柏瑞储存和tobacker回支付黑鬼头部。"

储存烟草是平黑塞，但这些家伙大多是chaws的自然叶扭曲。 当它们借用一嚼他们不generly把它切掉一把刀，但设在塞在他们之间的牙齿，咬用他们的牙齿和拖船在塞自己手中，直到他们得到这两；然后有时候，一个拥有的烟草看起来很悲哀的，在它的时候它是交回的，并说，讽刺:

"在这里，给我嚼，你把插头。"

所有的街道和小巷是只泥；他们警告没有什么别的但是泥土泥一样黑焦油和夜间大约一英尺深在某些地方，以及两个或三英寸的深度在所有的地方。 猪loafed和哼了一声周围everywheres. 你会看到泥泞的母猪和一窝猪

来抽沿着街道和whollop自己的权利下的方式，
在那里人们不得不走她，她会拉伸出和关闭她
的眼睛和波她的耳朵，而猪是挤奶她看起来
高兴，因为如果她是在工资。 很快你就能听到一个浪子唱
出，"嗨！ 所以孩子！ 生病了他，给我滚!"和sow会去，
最可怕的尖叫，狗或两个摆动到每个耳朵和
三个或四个打一个未来，然后你会看到所有
偷懒得看这事淡出人们的视线，和嘲笑有趣和
看感谢噪音。 然后他们会再回来解决，直到有一
狗的斗争。 没有任何东西唤醒他们，并让
他们高兴一切都过去了，像只狗一样战斗，除非它可能会放
松节油的上一个流浪的狗，放火烧他，或绑锡泛他的
尾巴，看看他自己的死亡。

在河上前面的一些房屋被伸出过银行，
以及他们鞠躬和弯曲，并准备甩在，人们
已经搬了出来。 该银行是屈服务下的一个角落的
一些人，和那个角落被挂了。 人居住在他们还没有，
但是dangersome，因为有时一个地带的土地尽可能广泛，因为一个
洞穴中的房子的时间。 有时一个带的土地的四分之一英里
深的将开始沿着洞穴和沿着洞穴，直到它的所有洞穴入
河中的一个夏天。 这样的一个城镇为，必须总是搬回来，
回来，回来，因为河流的总咬它。

该接近它得到了中午，日本厚厚的
货车和马匹在街头，更多的到来所有的时间。 家庭
获取他们的晚餐，他们从该国，吃他们在
货车。 有相当大的威士忌酒喝下去，我看到
三个战斗。 有人唱出：

"这里又旧博格斯!—在从国家，他有点老
每月喝醉了，在这里，他来了，孩子们！ "

所有的便鞋看起来很高兴；我估计他们是用于具有有趣的
推博格斯. 其中一个说：

"不知道谁他是个-gwyne来嚼这个时候。 如果他想a-chawed
了所有的男人，他是本a-gwyne到嚼在过去的二十年，他会
有相当大的ruputation现在"。

另一个说，"我希望老博格斯'd威胁我，因为然后我会知道我警告不gwyne死于个别，他们会这样做任何必要的手段'的一年。"

博格斯来自一个分裂沿着他的马、百日咳和大喊大叫喜欢一个印第安人，并唱出：

"克莱尔的轨道，塔尔. 我在waw路径，并将价格的紫外线棺材a-gwyne到提高。"

他喝醉了，并织有关在他的马鞍;他是五十多岁，并且有一个很红的脸。 每个人都骂他笑了他sassed他，他sassed回的，并说他会照顾他们和把它们放出来在他们的定期轮流，但他不能等待，现在就因为他会到城里来杀老歇朋上校和他的座右铭是"肉第一，勺子，除了吃到顶掉。"

他看到我和骑着说：

"总是什么忙也带你来f敢，孩子？ 你准备要死吗？"

然后他骑上。 我很害怕，但一个男人说：

"他的意思不是什么；他总是一个-半途而废就喜欢这时候他喝醉了。 他是最好的naturedest老傻瓜在Arkansaw—从来没有伤害没人，酗酒也不是清醒的。"

博格斯骑之前，最大的存在的城镇和弯他的头下来这样他就可以看到下帷幕遮篷和破口大骂：

"来到这里，歇朋! 出来满足男人你骗。 你是houn'我之后，我gwyne有你，太"!

所以他去了，叫歇朋一切，他可以把他的舌头，整条街上挤满了人听笑而去。 通过和通过一个自豪的美男子有关大会第五十五和他是一堆最好穿着男人在这镇太步骤出商店，和人群降回到每个侧面上让他来的。 他说博格斯，伟大的ca'm和缓慢的—他说：

"我已经厌倦了这一点，但我会忍受它，直到一点。 直到有一点介意—没有更长的时间。 如果你张开你的嘴对我一次只在那之后的时间你不能这么远，但我会找到你。"

然后他转去。 众人看着强大的清醒的；没有人搅拌，并有警告没有多大笑。 博格斯骑blackguarding歇朋大声，因为他可以喊，所有在街上；并且很快

回到他来之前停止商店时，仍然保持它。 一些男人
拥挤在他周围并试图让他闭嘴，但他不会，
他们告诉他，这将是下午一点，在大约十五分钟，所以他
必须回家—他必须去。 但它没有这样做没有好处。 他
讨论了所有他可能会和他的帽子扔下来的泥和
骑马过来的，很快离开他去一个-汹涌街上
再次，他灰色的头发-飞行。 每个人都可以获得一个机会，在
他试图自己最好的哄骗他的他的马，因此他们可能把他锁
起来让他清醒；但是它警告说没有用了街道他会撕开
一次，并得到歇朋另一个骂人. 有人说：

"去他的女儿！ —快，去他的女儿，有时他会
听她的。 如果有人能劝他，她可以。"

因此，有人开始运行。 我走下街上的一个方式，并
停止。 在大约五分钟或十分钟来这里博格斯再次，但不是在
他的马。 他是一个卷街对面对我，光头，
有一个朋友在两侧的他-霍尔特他的武器和赶紧他
。 他很安静，看着不安，他警告不挂回
任，而是做一些匆匆自己。 有人唱出：

"博格斯!"

我看过那里看看谁说的，这是上校
歇朋. 他站完全仍然在街头，并且有一把手枪
长在他的右手—没瞄准了它，但是，保持它与桶
倾向天空。 相同的第二我看到一个年轻的女孩未来
的运行的，两个男子与她。 博格斯和男人转过身来，看看
谁叫他，当他们看到枪的男人跳楼的一个
侧面，并将手枪枪管下来缓慢而稳定的水平—这两个
桶竖起。 博格斯投掷了两个他的手说："主啊，
不要开枪！" 砰！ 去第一枪，他摇摇晃晃地回来，抓在
空气—砰！ 去第二个，并且他跌倒退到
地面，重和固体，与他武器的扩散。 那个年轻的女孩
叫出来冲过来，并下她抛出自己在她的
父亲哭泣，而说，"噢，他已经杀了他，他已经杀了他！" 该
人群关闭了他们周围，并承担和卡住了另一个，
与他们的脖子伸，试图看到，人们在里面试

把他们回来和叫喊，"回来了，回来了！ 给他空，给他
空气！"

上校歇朋他把他的手枪在地上，转身
围绕在他的高跟鞋走了.

他们把博格斯一个小药店，人群按周围只是
相同的，整个城镇下面，我冲了个好
地方，在窗口，在这里我接近他并且可以看到。 他们
把他安放在地板上，并把一个大型的圣经下他的头，打开
另一个和传播它在他的乳房，但是他们撕开他的衬衫，首先，
我看到其中一颗子弹进去。 他做了大约十几个长
喘气，他的胸抬起圣经上的时候他就在他的呼吸，
让它再次当他呼吸了—在那之后他仍然
他已经死了。 然后，他们拉他的女儿离他远点，尖叫
和哭声，并把她关闭。 她是关于十六个，并非常甜美
温柔，但可怕的淡和害怕。

嗯，很快的整个小镇里蠕动和
scrouging和推推搡搡获得的窗口，并看一看，
但人有地方不会给他们了，伙计们后面
他们说所有的时间，"说，现在，你已经看够了，你
的同伴，'泰恩不正确和'泰恩不公平对你留塔尔所有的时间，并且
从来没有给任何人机会; 其他人有自己的权利，以及你。"

有相当大的唠叨回来，所以我滑了出来，想也许
那里会有麻烦。 街道上是充分的，每个人都很
兴奋。 每个人都看到枪击，告诉它如何发生的事情，
并没有被一大群人包装周围每一个这些研究员，
拉伸着脖子和倾听。 一个长，瘦高个男子，长头发
和一个大的白色毛瘦腿顶帽子在他的后头部，和一个歪-
处理甘蔗，标记出了地方上的地在哪里博格斯站在
哪里歇朋站，人们跟着他从
一个地方到t'other看着一切，他完成，并咬他们
的头显示他们理解， 弯腰一点并搁置他们
手上他们的大腿来看他标记的地方在当地与
他的甘蔗；以及然后他站起来直接的和僵硬的其歇朋已经
站，皱着眉头，并具有他的帽檐下过他的眼睛，并唱
出来，"博格斯!"然后取他的甘蔗慢下来的水平，并且说

"砰"的交错的倒退，说"Bang!"再次下跌下来的平上
他的背部。 人们已经看到的事情说他做到了完美的；说
它是只完全相同的方式，它所有的事情发生了。 然后尽可能多的十几个
人得到了他们的瓶子和处理他。

好了，有人说歇朋应该被处死. 在
大约一分钟的每个人都说它；所以他们去了，疯狂和
大喊大叫，并抢下来的每一个衣服行他们来做
挂。

第二十二章

他们涌向歇朋家、百日咳和汹涌的
就像印第安人，一切都有明确的方式或得到运行和
tromped到蘑菇，这是可怕看到的。 儿童被倾侧它未来
的暴民，尖叫和试图摆脱的方式；以及每一个
窗沿着路上全是妇女的头，并有黑人
男孩在每一棵树，并钱和婢看过的每一个围栏；以及
尽快这群暴民会得到近他们，他们会打破和
skaddle回。 许多妇女和女孩哭并
把上，最害怕死亡。

他们蜂拥前歇朋的栅栏厚，因为他们
可以拥堵在一起，你能不能听见自己认为对的噪音。 它
是一个小小的二十英尺的院子里。 一些唱"推倒围墙! 撕裂
下来的围栏!" 然后有一个球拍的剥和拆除和
粉碎，上下她去，前面的墙上的人群开始
卷在像波。

只是那么歇朋步骤推到屋顶他的前门廊，
双筒枪在他手里，并且需要自己的立场，完全ca'm
和蓄意的，不说一句话。 拍停止，而波
吸回。

歇朋从来没有说过一个字—就站在那里，看着下降。 在
寂静是令人毛骨悚然的可怕和感到不舒服。 歇朋运行他的眼睛慢
着人群；以及不论在何处袭击的人们尝试了一点点了-
注视他，但他们不能；它们放弃了他们的眼睛，看着偷偷摸摸.
然后很快歇朋种笑了；不愉快的一种，但是

那种让你感觉像当你正在吃面包，得到了沙
。

然后他说，慢和蔑:

"的想法你的私刑处死任何人！ 它是有趣。 想你
想你已经拨足够林一个男人！ 因为你是勇敢
足够的焦油和羽毛可怜的寂寞的投出妇女来
沿着这里，有没有让你觉得你有砂砾足够躺在你的
手上的一个人吗？ 为什么，一个人的安全手中的十万的
你的样—只要它的白天和你在不在他身后。

"我认识你吗? 我知道你清楚的通过出生在
南部，和我住在北方，所以我知道的平均周围的一切。
平均人是个懦夫。 在北方，他可以让任何人走过来他
希望，和去家庭和祈祷的一个谦卑的精神承担。 在
南方一个人所有他自己，已经停止的一个阶段充分的人在
白天，并且抢了很多。 你报纸上打电话给你一个勇敢的人那么
多，你认为你是勇敢比任何其他人—而
你只是因为勇敢，而没有勇敢. 为什么不用你陪审团挂
杀人犯? 因为他们害怕的人的朋友们会拍摄他们在
后面，在黑暗—这只是他们会怎么做。

"所以他们总是无罪；然后一个人去的夜晚，有一
百掩盖懦夫在他的背部和买下它的无赖。 你的
错误是，你没带一个人与你，这是一个错误，
另一个是，你没有来在黑暗中把你的面罩。 你
带来的一部分，一个人—Buck哈克尼斯，如果你没有
他开始你，你一取出来吹。

"你不想来的。 平均人不喜欢麻烦和
危险。 你不喜欢麻烦和危险。 但如果只有一半的男人—
等降压哈克尼斯，有—喊'Lynch他！ lynch他！你
害怕回来了—害怕你会发现你是什么—
懦夫—所以你养大叫，悬挂自己上来，
半个男人的衣尾，并来势汹汹的在这里，宣誓就职是什么大
事你要做。 该pitifulest的事了是一群暴徒，这是什么
一个军队是一个暴徒，他们不战斗的勇气，这是出生在他们，但
有勇气就是借由他们的质量，并从他们的官员。
但是一群没有任何人在下pitifulness.

现在你要做的就是下垂你的尾巴和回家，并
爬在一个洞。 如果任何真正的私刑将完成它的工作将在
黑暗中，南方时尚的；他们来的时候他们会把他们的
面罩，拿一个男人。 现在离开—把你的一半，一个
人与你"的—折腾他的枪在他的左臂，并扳起它
时，他说，这一点。

人群中用回突，然后打破了一切除了，走
撕掉每一个这种方式，并降压哈克尼斯他跟它在他们之后，
找可容忍的便宜。 我可以留下如果我想，但是我没有想
到的。

我去马戏团和loafed周围背面直到看守
过去了，然后潜在帐篷里。 我有我的第二十美元的金
块和其他一些钱，但我估计我好把它保存，因为
没有没有告诉你很快你会需要它，离家出走
和陌生人之间这种方式。 你不能太小心。 我不反对
花钱在马戏团的时候没有任何其他方式，但也
不是没有用在浪费他们。

这是一个真正的欺马戏团。 这是splendidest视都是
当他们都来也能在，两个和两个，一位绅士和一位女士，侧的
边的男人只是在他们的抽屉和内衣，没有鞋子，也没有
马镫，并搁置他们手上他们的大腿，轻松、舒适—
必须有一个已经二十的人和每一位女士与一个可爱的
肤色和完美的美丽，看着就像一个团伙的真正
确保足够的皇后区 和穿着的衣服，花费数百万美元，
而只是充斥着钻石。 这是一个强大的收视；我从来没有看到
任何东西那么可爱。 然后一个接一个他们站了起来，站起来，去
一个编织的周围环，使温和和波浪和优雅的男子
看过这么高大的、通风和直接与他们的头上下摆动和
撇沿，远离那里在帐篷屋顶，和每个女人的
玫瑰-绿叶装扮扑柔滑在她的臀部，她在寻找
像是最可爱的遮阳伞。

然后越来越快，他们去了，他们都跳舞，首先一
脚在空，然后其他的，在马倾越来越多，
并ringmaster会和圆圆的中心极裂他的
鞭子和喊着"嗨！—嗨！"和小丑笑话背后他；

和所有的手下降的缰绳，每一位女士把她的
手指关节上她的臀部和每一个绅士折他武器，然后如何
马有没有身子和驼背自己！ 和这么一个后
他们都跳掉进圈，并提出了最甜蜜的蝴蝶结我曾经看到的，
然后蹦跳出来和每个人都拍手走
只是野性。

好了，所有通过马戏团，他们做过的最惊人的事情；
所有的时间，小丑上进行的，因此它多数被杀的人。 该
ringmaster永远不能说一句话给他但是他回来的在他快
作为一眨眼的最有趣的事情一体曾说，和如何他
能想到这么多人，这么突然这么拍，我
不能不是吧明白了。 为什么，我不能一想到他们在一年的时间。
和一个喝醉了的男子试图获得进入戒指—他说他想
骑，说他可以骑以及任何曾经是。 他们认为
，试图保持他，但他不听，整个展
陷于停滞。 然后人们开始喊叫他，让
他的乐趣，这使他疯狂，他开始偷窃和破损；因此，
激起了人的，很多男子开始积累下来的
长凳和群对环说，"把他打下来！ 扔
他出去！"和一个或两个女人开始叫喊。 所以，然后，
ringmaster他做了一点点的讲话，并说他希望不会有
没有干扰，并且如果男人想保证他不会做没有更多的
麻烦他会让他骑如果他认为他可以留在马。 所以
大家都笑着说所有的权利，和男子了。 该分钟，他
是上，马开始rip和撕裂和跳腾跃的周围，有
两个马戏团的男子挂在他的缰绳试图抓住他喝醉了的
男子挂在他的脖子上,和他的脚后跟在空中飞行的每一跳，
及整个人群的人站起来喊大笑到
流泪滚落下来。 最后，确保足够的，所有马戏团的男子可以做的，
马挣脱，并远离他去了非常喜欢的国家，和圆
圆环，这sot躺在他挂到他的脖子，
与第一条腿挂最地在一边，然后
t'other一个在t'other边，而人们只是疯狂的。 它警告不好笑
我，但我所有的颤抖看到他的危险。 但很快，他
挣扎着astraddle和抓住缰绳，一卷和以此方式；

而下一分钟他如雨后春笋般出现以及掉缰绳站! 和
马-会喜欢的一个房子着火了。 他只是站在那里，一帆船
的周围为方便舒适，如果他警告永远不醉倒在他的生活—
然后他就开始拉开他的衣服和吊带他们。 他流下他们，使
他们厚厚的一种堵塞空气中，总共他棚十七
诉讼。 而且，然后，他就在那儿，苗条和英俊，穿着
花哨和最漂亮的你曾经看到他亮到那匹马用他的
鞭子和他相当哼声和最后跳过的关闭，并提出了他的
弓和跳舞到更衣室，每个人都只是一个-嚎叫
愉快和惊讶。

然后ringmaster他看到他是如何被人骗了，他是
最病ringmaster你看到的，我估计。 为什么，这是他自己的
男人！ 他已经得到了那个笑话所有的他自己的头，永远不会让
任何人。 嗯，我觉得羞怯足够了所以，但我不会一
直在这ringmaster的地方，而不是一千美元。 我不知道，
可能有bullier马戏团于什么，一个是，但我从来没有击中
他们。 不管怎么说，这是很多好对我已足够；以及，无论我
跑过它，它可以拥有我所有的定义。

好吧，那天晚上我们有我们的表演；但是，没有警告不仅大约
十二个人—只是足以支付费用。 和他们笑了所有
的时间，并让公爵疯了，人人都离开，无论如何，
前显示的是经过去，但一个男孩这是睡着了。 所以公爵
说些Arkansaw lunkheads不能来了莎士比亚什么
他们想要的是低喜剧—也许什么品质比
较低的喜剧，他认为. 他说他可以大自己的风格。 因此，明
天早上，他得到了一些大片的包装纸和一些黑色的油漆，
并绘制了一些传单，并坚持他们所有的村庄。
票据中说：

在法院的房子！ 3晚只！

世界着名的悲剧大卫*加里克的
年轻！ 和埃德蒙*基恩的老人! 伦敦和
大陆剧院，在他们的惊心动魄的悲剧的国王
CAMELEOPARD，或皇家异兽! ! !

入50美分。

然后在底部是最大的线路，其中说：

女士们，儿童不承认。

"在那里，"他说，"如果这行不获取它们，我不知道 Arkansaw!"

第二十三章

好了，有一天他和王是很难在它，操纵一个阶段和窗帘和行的蜡烛脚灯；以及那天晚上的房子果酱全的男人没有时间。 当地方不能保持不多，公爵，他放弃抚育门和绕到后面的方式来到舞台站起来之前的帷幕，并作了讲话，称赞了这个悲剧，并说这是最thrillingest一一个曾经是，让他去-吹嘘的悲剧，以及关于埃德蒙*基恩的老年人，这是发挥主要的主要部分； 而在最后时他得到了大家的期望了足够高，他推出了窗帘，而下一分钟国王来了-跃出在所有四肢，赤裸裸的；他画的所有结束，环条-andstriped，所有各种各样的色彩，因为灿烂如彩虹。 和而不考虑其余的他的衣服；它只是野生的，但这是可怕的可笑的。 人们最自杀笑；以及当国王做了跃动和capered关闭幕后，他们咆哮着鼓掌，并冲进和山楂-其辞，直到他回来做完它，之后，他们让他这样做的另一个时间。 那么，这将使牛笑看到闪耀的老白痴切。

然后公爵他让窗帘下来，蝴蝶结的人，并说的伟大的悲剧将进行只有两个晚上多，在账户按伦敦的参与，哪里的席位是所有的销售已经在德鲁道，然后他使他们的另一鞠躬，并说如果他成功了在取悦他们，并指示他们，他将被深深obleeged如果他们会提到它为他们的朋友并得到他们来看看它。

二十个人唱出:
"什么，是吗? 是这样吗？"
公爵说，是的。 然后有一个美好的时光。 每个人都唱出来，
"出售的！"，并起来疯狂的，并且是要用于这个阶段，他们的
悲剧. 但是一个大好男人跳起来的长凳上和呼喊:
"坚持住！ 只是一个词，先生们。" 他们停下来听一听。 "我们
卖了强大的严重销售。 但是，我们不想成为笑柄的
这整个小镇，我认为，从来没有听到过去的这事只要
我们的生活。 没有。 我们要做的是走出这里安静，并谈这个节目
，并出售其余的小镇！ 然后我们都会在同一条船上。
这不是明智的?" ("你打赌。—该jedge是正确的！"每个人都
唱出来。) "所有的权利，那么—不一个字的有关任何出售。 沿着走的家庭，
并建议大家都过来看看这一悲剧。"

第二天你就不能听到没有围绕该镇，但是多么
灿烂，显示。 房子被卡住再次那个夜晚，我们卖
这个人群同样的方式。 当我和我的国王和公爵到了家里
的木筏我们都不得不一个晚饭；以及通过和通过，大约午夜时分，他们所作的
杰姆和我回来她出去和浮动她的下河中间，并
把她带和隐藏她的大约两英里以下的小镇。

第三天晚上家里挤满了—他们警告不新
来者这段时间，但人们这是在该显示的其他两个晚上。 我
站在通过公爵在门口，我看到，每一个男人走在了
他的口袋里鼓鼓的，什么闷闷在他的外套—我看到它的
警告没有香水，无论是，不通过一个长期的视线。 我闻病蛋
桶，而腐烂的卷心菜，这样的事情；以及如果我知道这标志
的死猫被周围的，我打赌我这样做，有六十四个的他们
走了进去。 我在那里猛一分钟，但它也各种各样对我，我
不能忍受它。 嗯，当地不能举行更多人的
公爵他给一个家伙一个季度，并告诉他倾向的门给他一
分钟，然后他开始为该阶段的大门，我在他之后；但是
距离我们转过拐角，并正在黑暗中他说:

"现在快走，直到你离开的房子，然后shin为
筏像狄更斯后，你！"
我做到了，他所做的一样。 我们的筏在同一时间,
在不到两秒钟，我们是滑翔下流，所有的黑暗

仍然，边向中间的河，没有人说一句话。 我
觉得这个可怜的国王是个华而不实的时间与观众，
但没有进行排序；很快，他爬出来自下
棚屋，并说：

"嗯，你怎么旧的东西了这个时候，杜克?" 他没有
最镇。

我们从来没有表现出光，直到我们大约十英里下面的
村庄。 然后我们点亮了晚饭，和国王和公爵相当
嘲笑他们的骨头松动的方式，他们会为他们服务的人。 该
公爵说：

"菜鸟,flatheads! 我知道第一个房子会让妈妈和
我们的其他镇上那绳子；并且我知道他们会放我们的第三
夜晚，并且考虑它们的现在。 好了，这是他们反过来，我想
给的东西知道他们怎么会把它。 我只想
知道他们是如何把他们的机会。 他们可以把它变成一个
野餐如果他们想要的—他们带来了大量规定。"

他们的流氓了在四百六十五美元，
三个晚上。 我永远不会看到钱拖在马车载喜欢
之前。 通过和通过，当他们睡着了，打鼾、吉姆说：

"不它s'prise你的方式dem国王进行，哈克？ "

"不，"我说，"它不知道。"

"你为什么不它，哈克？ "

"嗯，不，因为它的品种。 我估计他们都是人，"

"但是，哈克,你们这种乱七八糟的国王o'ourn是reglar恶棍;dat的脸谱是什么
dey；dey的reglar的流氓。"

"好吧，这就是我说的；所有国王的主要是恶棍，
皮毛为我可以让出来"。

"是dat吗"

"你读过关于他们一旦—你会看到的。 看看亨利八；
这个'n's的一个星期天学校校长给了他。 看看查尔斯
第二和路易十四，以及路易十五和詹姆斯*第二，和
爱德华*第二，和理查德*第三，第四十多；除了所有他们的
撒克逊heptarchies，用撕裂这么在古老的时间和提高该隐.
我的，你应该看到老亨利八当他在盛开。 他
是一个花。 他娶新妻子每天，砍掉

her head next morning. And he would do it just as indifferent as if he was ordering up eggs. ‘Fetch up Nell Gwynn,’ he says. They fetch her up. Next morning, ‘Chop off her head!’ And they chop it off. ‘Fetch up Jane Shore,’ he says; and up she comes, Next morning, ‘Chop off her head’—and they chop it off. ‘Ring up Fair Rosamun.’ Fair Rosamun answers the bell. Next morning, ‘Chop off her head.’ And he made every one of them tell him a tale every night; and he kept that up till he had hogged a thousand and one tales that way, and then he put them all in a book, and called it Domesday Book—which was a good name and stated the case. You don’t know kings, Jim, but I know them; and this old rip of ourn is one of the cleanest I’ve struck in history. Well, Henry he takes a notion he wants to get up some trouble with this country. How does he go at it—give notice?—give the country a show? No. All of a sudden he heaves all the tea in Boston Harbor overboard, and whacks out a declaration of independence, and dares them to come on. That was HIS style—he never give anybody a chance. He had suspicions of his father, the Duke of Wellington. Well, what did he do? Ask him to show up? No—drownded him in a butt of mamsey, like a cat. S’pose people left money laying around where he was—what did he do? He collared it. S’pose he contracted to do a thing, and you paid him, and didn’t set down there and see that he done it—what did he do? He always done the other thing. S’pose he opened his mouth—what then? If he didn’t shut it up powerful quick he’d lose a lie every time. That’s the kind of a bug Henry was; and if we’d a had him along ‘stead of our kings he’d a fooled that town a heap worse than ourn done. I don’t say that ourn is lambs, because they ain’t, when you come right down to the cold facts; but they ain’t nothing to THAT old ram, anyway. All I say is, kings is kings, and you got to make allowances. Take them all around, they’re a mighty ornery lot. It’s the way they’re raised.”

“But dis one do SMELL so like de nation, Huck.”

“Well, they all do, Jim. We can’t help the way a king smells; history don’t tell no way.”

“Now de duke, he’s a tolerble likely man in some ways.”

“Yes, a duke’s different. But not very different. This one’s a middling hard lot for a duke. When he’s drunk there ain’t no near-sighted man could tell him from a king.”

“Well, anyways, I doan’ hanker for no mo’ un um, Huck. Dese is all I kin stan’.”

“It’s the way I feel, too, Jim. But we’ve got them on our hands, and we got to remember what they are, and make allowances. Sometimes I wish we could hear of a country that’s out of kings.”

What was the use to tell Jim these warn’t real kings and dukes? It wouldn’t a done no good; and, besides, it was just as I said: you couldn’t tell them from the real kind.

I went to sleep, and Jim didn’t call me when it was my turn. He often done that. When I waked up just at daybreak he was sitting there with his head down betwixt his knees, moaning and mourning to himself. I didn’t take notice nor let on. I knowed what it was about. He was thinking about his wife and his children, away up yonder, and he was low and homesick; because he hadn’t ever been away from home before in his life; and I do believe he cared just as much for his people as white folks does for their’n. It don’t seem natural, but I reckon it’s so. He was often moaning and mourning that way nights, when he judged I was asleep, and saying, “Po’ little ‘Lizabeth! po’ little Johnny! it’s mighty hard; I spec’ I ain’t ever gwyne to see you no mo’, no mo’!” He was a mighty good nigger, Jim was.

But this time I somehow got to talking to him about his wife and young ones; and by and by he says:

“What makes me feel so bad dis time ‘uz bekase I hear sumpn over yonder on de bank like a whack, er a slam, while ago, en it mine me er de time I treat my little ‘Lizabeth so ornery. She warn’t on’y ‘bout fo’ year ole, en she tuck de sk’yarlet fever, en had a powful rough spell; but she got well, en one day she was a-stannin’ aroun’, en I says to her, I says:

“‘Shet de do’.’

“She never done it; jis’ stood dah, kiner smilin’ up at me. It make me mad; en I says agin, mighty loud, I says:

“‘Doan’ you hear me? Shet de do’!’

“She jis stood de same way, kiner smilin’ up. I was a-bilin’! I says:

"'I lay I MAKE you mine!'

"En wid dat I fetch' her a slap side de head dat sont her a-sprawlin'. Den I went into de yuther room, en 'uz gone 'bout ten minutes; en when I come back dah was dat do' a-stannin' open YIT, en dat chile stannin' mos' right in it, a-lookin' down and mournin', en de tears runnin' down. My, but I WUZ mad! I was a-gwyne for de chile, but jis' den—it was a do' dat open innerds—jis' den, 'long come de wind en slam it to, behine de chile, ker-BLAM!—en my lan', de chile never move'! My breff mos' hop outer me; en I feel so—so—I doan' know HOW I feel. I crope out, all a-tremblin', en crope aroun' en open de do' easy en slow, en poke my head in behine de chile, sof' en still, en all uv a sudden I says POW! jis' as loud as I could yell. SHE NEVER BUDGE! Oh, Huck, I bust out a-cryin' en grab her up in my arms, en say, 'Oh, de po' little thing! De Lord God Amighty fogive po' ole Jim, kaze he never gwyne to fogive hisself as long's he live!' Oh, she was plumb deef en dumb, Huck, plumb deef en dumb—en I'd ben a-treat'n her so!"

Chapter XXIV

NEXT day, towards night, we laid up under a little willow towhead out in the middle, where there was a village on each side of the river, and the duke and the king begun to lay out a plan for working them towns. Jim he spoke to the duke, and said he hoped it wouldn't take but a few hours, because it got mighty heavy and tiresome to him when he had to lay all day in the wigwam tied with the rope. You see, when we left him all alone we had to tie him, because if anybody happened on to him all by himself and not tied it wouldn't look much like he was a runaway nigger, you know. So the duke said it WAS kind of hard to have to lay roped all day, and he'd cipher out some way to get around it.

He was uncommon bright, the duke was, and he soon struck it. He dressed Jim up in King Lear's outfit—it was a long curtain-calico gown, and a white horse-hair wig and whiskers; and then he took his theater paint and painted Jim's face and hands and ears and neck all over a dead, dull, solid blue, like a man that's been drownded nine days. Blamed if he

warn’t the horriblest looking outrage I ever see. Then the duke took and wrote out a sign on a shingle so:

Sick Arab—but harmless when not out of his head.

And he nailed that shingle to a lath, and stood the lath up four or five foot in front of the wigwam. Jim was satisfied. He said it was a sight better than lying tied a couple of years every day, and trembling all over every time there was a sound. The duke told him to make himself free and easy, and if anybody ever come meddling around, he must hop out of the wigwam, and carry on a little, and fetch a howl or two like a wild beast, and he reckoned they would light out and leave him alone. Which was sound enough judgment; but you take the average man, and he wouldn’t wait for him to howl. Why, he didn’t only look like he was dead, he looked considerable more than that.

These rapscallions wanted to try the Nonesuch again, because there was so much money in it, but they judged it wouldn’t be safe, because maybe the news might a worked along down by this time. They couldn’t hit no project that suited exactly; so at last the duke said he reckoned he’d lay off and work his brains an hour or two and see if he couldn’t put up something on the Arkansaw village; and the king he allowed he would drop over to t’other village without any plan, but just trust in Providence to lead him the profitable way—meaning the devil, I reckon. We had all bought store clothes where we stopped last; and now the king put his’n on, and he told me to put mine on. I done it, of course. The king’s duds was all black, and he did look real swell and starchy. I never knowed how clothes could change a body before. Why, before, he looked like the orneriest old rip that ever was; but now, when he’d take off his new white beaver and make a bow and do a smile, he looked that grand and good and pious that you’d say he had walked right out of the ark, and maybe was old Leviticus himself. Jim cleaned up the canoe, and I got my paddle ready. There was a big steamboat laying at the shore away up under the point, about three mile above the town—been there a couple of hours, taking on freight. Says the king:

“Seein’ how I’m dressed, I reckon maybe I better arrive down from St. Louis or Cincinnati, or some other big place. Go for the steamboat, Huckleberry; we’ll come down to the village on her.”

I didn’t have to be ordered twice to go and take a steamboat ride. I fetched the shore a half a mile above the village, and then went scooting along the bluff bank in the easy water. Pretty soon we come to a nice innocent-looking young country jake setting on a log swabbing the sweat off of his face, for it was powerful warm weather; and he had a couple of big carpet-bags by him.

“Run her nose in shore,” says the king. I done it. “Wher’ you bound for, young man?”

“For the steamboat; going to Orleans.”

“Git aboard,” says the king. “Hold on a minute, my servant ‘ll he’p you with them bags. Jump out and he’p the gentleman, Adolphus”—meaning me, I see.

I done so, and then we all three started on again. The young chap was mighty thankful; said it was tough work toting his baggage such weather. He asked the king where he was going, and the king told him he’d come down the river and landed at the other village this morning, and now he was going up a few mile to see an old friend on a farm up there. The young fellow says:

“When I first see you I says to myself, ‘It’s Mr. Wilks, sure, and he come mighty near getting here in time.’ But then I says again, ‘No, I reckon it ain’t him, or else he wouldn’t be paddling up the river.’ You AIN’T him, are you?”

“No, my name’s Blodgett—Elexander Blodgett—REVEREND Elexander Blodgett, I s’pose I must say, as I’m one o’ the Lord’s poor servants. But still I’m jist as able to be sorry for Mr. Wilks for not arriving in time, all the same, if he’s missed anything by it—which I hope he hasn’t.”

“Well, he don’t miss any property by it, because he’ll get that all right; but he’s missed seeing his brother Peter die—which he mayn’t mind, nobody can tell as to that—but his brother would a give anything in this world to see HIM before he died; never talked about nothing else all these three weeks; hadn’t seen him since they was boys together—and hadn’t ever seen his brother William at all—that’s the deef and dumb one—William ain’t more than thirty or thirty-five. Peter and George were the only ones that come out here; George was the married brother;

him and his wife both died last year. Harvey and William's the only ones that's left now; and, as I was saying, they haven't got here in time."

"Did anybody send 'em word?"

"Oh, yes; a month or two ago, when Peter was first took; because Peter said then that he sorter felt like he warn't going to get well this time. You see, he was pretty old, and George's g'yirls was too young to be much company for him, except Mary Jane, the red-headed one; and so he was kinder lonesome after George and his wife died, and didn't seem to care much to live. He most desperately wanted to see Harvey—and William, too, for that matter—because he was one of them kind that can't bear to make a will. He left a letter behind for Harvey, and said he'd told in it where his money was hid, and how he wanted the rest of the property divided up so George's g'yirls would be all right—for George didn't leave nothing. And that letter was all they could get him to put a pen to."

"Why do you reckon Harvey don't come? Wher' does he live?"

"Oh, he lives in England—Sheffield—preaches there—hasn't ever been in this country. He hasn't had any too much time—and besides he mightn't a got the letter at all, you know."

"Too bad, too bad he couldn't a lived to see his brothers, poor soul. You going to Orleans, you say?"

"Yes, but that ain't only a part of it. I'm going in a ship, next Wednesday, for Ryo Janeero, where my uncle lives."

"It's a pretty long journey. But it'll be lovely; wisht I was a-going. Is Mary Jane the oldest? How old is the others?"

"Mary Jane's nineteen, Susan's fifteen, and Joanna's about fourteen —that's the one that gives herself to good works and has a hare-lip."

"Poor things! to be left alone in the cold world so."

"Well, they could be worse off. Old Peter had friends, and they ain't going to let them come to no harm. There's Hobson, the Babtis' preacher; and Deacon Lot Hovey, and Ben Rucker, and Abner Shackleford, and Levi Bell, the lawyer; and Dr. Robinson, and their wives, and the widow Bartley, and—well, there's a lot of them; but these are the ones that Peter was thickest with, and used to write about

sometimes, when he wrote home; so Harvey 'll know where to look for friends when he gets here."

Well, the old man went on asking questions till he just fairly emptied that young fellow. Blamed if he didn't inquire about everybody and everything in that blessed town, and all about the Wilkses; and about Peter's business—which was a tanner; and about George's—which was a carpenter; and about Harvey's—which was a dissentering minister; and so on, and so on. Then he says:

"What did you want to walk all the way up to the steamboat for?"

"Because she's a big Orleans boat, and I was afeard she mightn't stop there. When they're deep they won't stop for a hail. A Cincinnati boat will, but this is a St. Louis one."

"Was Peter Wilks well off?"

"Oh, yes, pretty well off. He had houses and land, and it's reckoned he left three or four thousand in cash hid up som'ers."

"When did you say he died?"

"I didn't say, but it was last night."

"Funeral to-morrow, likely?"

"Yes, 'bout the middle of the day."

"Well, it's all terrible sad; but we've all got to go, one time or another. So what we want to do is to be prepared; then we're all right."

"Yes, sir, it's the best way. Ma used to always say that."

When we struck the boat she was about done loading, and pretty soon she got off. The king never said nothing about going aboard, so I lost my ride, after all. When the boat was gone the king made me paddle up another mile to a lonesome place, and then he got ashore and says:

"Now hustle back, right off, and fetch the duke up here, and the new carpet-bags. And if he's gone over to t'other side, go over there and git him. And tell him to git himself up regardless. Shove along, now."

I see what HE was up to; but I never said nothing, of course. When I got back with the duke we hid the canoe, and then they set down on a log, and the king told him everything, just like the young fellow had said it —every last word of it. And all the time he was a-doing it he tried to talk like an Englishman; and he done it pretty well, too, for a slouch. I

can’t imitate him, and so I ain’t a-going to try to; but he really done it pretty good. Then he says:

“How are you on the deef and dumb, Bilgewater?”

The duke said, leave him alone for that; said he had played a deef and dumb person on the histronic boards. So then they waited for a steamboat.

About the middle of the afternoon a couple of little boats come along, but they didn’t come from high enough up the river; but at last there was a big one, and they hailed her. She sent out her yawl, and we went aboard, and she was from Cincinnati; and when they found we only wanted to go four or five mile they was booming mad, and gave us a cussing, and said they wouldn’t land us. But the king was ca’m. He says:

“If gentlemen kin afford to pay a dollar a mile apiece to be took on and put off in a yawl, a steamboat kin afford to carry ‘em, can’t it?”

So they softened down and said it was all right; and when we got to the village they yawled us ashore. About two dozen men flocked down when they see the yawl a-coming, and when the king says:

“Kin any of you gentlemen tell me wher’ Mr. Peter Wilks lives?” they give a glance at one another, and nodded their heads, as much as to say, “What d’ I tell you?” Then one of them says, kind of soft and gentle:

“I’m sorry sir, but the best we can do is to tell you where he DID live yesterday evening.”

Sudden as winking the ornery old cretur went an to smash, and fell up against the man, and put his chin on his shoulder, and cried down his back, and says:

“Alas, alas, our poor brother—gone, and we never got to see him; oh, it’s too, too hard!”

Then he turns around, blubbering, and makes a lot of idiotic signs to the duke on his hands, and blamed if he didn’t drop a carpet-bag and bust out a-crying. If they warn’t the beatenest lot, them two frauds, that ever I struck.

Well, the men gathered around and sympathized with them, and said all sorts of kind things to them, and carried their carpet-bags up the hill for them, and let them lean on them and cry, and told the king all about his brother’s last moments, and the king he told it all over again on his

hands to the duke, and both of them took on about that dead tanner like they'd lost the twelve disciples. Well, if ever I struck anything like it, I'm a nigger. It was enough to make a body ashamed of the human race.

Chapter XXV

THE news was all over town in two minutes, and you could see the people tearing down on the run from every which way, some of them putting on their coats as they come. Pretty soon we was in the middle of a crowd, and the noise of the tramping was like a soldier march. The windows and dooryards was full; and every minute somebody would say, over a fence:

"Is it THEM?"

And somebody trotting along with the gang would answer back and say:

"You bet it is."

When we got to the house the street in front of it was packed, and the three girls was standing in the door. Mary Jane WAS red-headed, but that don't make no difference, she was most awful beautiful, and her face and her eyes was all lit up like glory, she was so glad her uncles was come. The king he spread his arms, and Mary Jane she jumped for them, and the hare-lip jumped for the duke, and there they HAD it! Everybody most, leastways women, cried for joy to see them meet again at last and have such good times.

Then the king he hunched the duke private—I see him do it—and then he looked around and see the coffin, over in the corner on two chairs; so then him and the duke, with a hand across each other's shoulder, and t'other hand to their eyes, walked slow and solemn over there, everybody dropping back to give them room, and all the talk and noise stopping, people saying "Sh!" and all the men taking their hats off and drooping their heads, so you could a heard a pin fall. And when they got there they bent over and looked in the coffin, and took one sight, and then they bust out a-crying so you could a heard them to Orleans, most; and then they put their arms around each other's necks, and hung their chins over each other's shoulders; and then for three minutes, or maybe

four, I never see two men leak the way they done. And, mind you, everybody was doing the same; and the place was that damp I never see anything like it. Then one of them got on one side of the coffin, and t'other on t'other side, and they kneeled down and rested their foreheads on the coffin, and let on to pray all to themselves. Well, when it come to that it worked the crowd like you never see anything like it, and everybody broke down and went to sobbing right out loud—the poor girls, too; and every woman, nearly, went up to the girls, without saying a word, and kissed them, solemn, on the forehead, and then put their hand on their head, and looked up towards the sky, with the tears running down, and then busted out and went off sobbing and swabbing, and give the next woman a show. I never see anything so disgusting.

Well, by and by the king he gets up and comes forward a little, and works himself up and slobbers out a speech, all full of tears and flapdoodle about its being a sore trial for him and his poor brother to lose the diseased, and to miss seeing diseased alive after the long journey of four thousand mile, but it's a trial that's sweetened and sanctified to us by this dear sympathy and these holy tears, and so he thanks them out of his heart and out of his brother's heart, because out of their mouths they can't, words being too weak and cold, and all that kind of rot and slush, till it was just sickening; and then he blubbers out a pious goody-goody Amen, and turns himself loose and goes to crying fit to bust.

And the minute the words were out of his mouth somebody over in the crowd struck up the doxolojer, and everybody joined in with all their might, and it just warmed you up and made you feel as good as church letting out. Music is a good thing; and after all that soul-butter and hogwash I never see it freshen up things so, and sound so honest and bully.

Then the king begins to work his jaw again, and says how him and his nieces would be glad if a few of the main principal friends of the family would take supper here with them this evening, and help set up with the ashes of the diseased; and says if his poor brother laying yonder could speak he knows who he would name, for they was names that was very dear to him, and mentioned often in his letters; and so he will name the same, to wit, as follows, vizz.:—Rev. Mr. Hobson, and Deacon Lot

Hovey, and Mr. Ben Rucker, and Abner Shackleford, and Levi Bell, and Dr. Robinson, and their wives, and the widow Bartley.

Rev. Hobson and Dr. Robinson was down to the end of the town a-hunting together—that is, I mean the doctor was shipping a sick man to t'other world, and the preacher was pinting him right. Lawyer Bell was away up to Louisville on business. But the rest was on hand, and so they all come and shook hands with the king and thanked him and talked to him; and then they shook hands with the duke and didn't say nothing, but just kept a-smiling and bobbing their heads like a passel of sapheads whilst he made all sorts of signs with his hands and said "Goo-goo—goo-goo-goo" all the time, like a baby that can't talk.

So the king he blattered along, and managed to inquire about pretty much everybody and dog in town, by his name, and mentioned all sorts of little things that happened one time or another in the town, or to George's family, or to Peter. And he always let on that Peter wrote him the things; but that was a lie: he got every blessed one of them out of that young flathead that we canoed up to the steamboat.

Then Mary Jane she fetched the letter her father left behind, and the king he read it out loud and cried over it. It give the dwelling-house and three thousand dollars, gold, to the girls; and it give the tanyard (which was doing a good business), along with some other houses and land (worth about seven thousand), and three thousand dollars in gold to Harvey and William, and told where the six thousand cash was hid down cellar. So these two frauds said they'd go and fetch it up, and have everything square and above-board; and told me to come with a candle. We shut the cellar door behind us, and when they found the bag they spilt it out on the floor, and it was a lovely sight, all them yaller-boys. My, the way the king's eyes did shine! He slaps the duke on the shoulder and says:

"Oh, THIS ain't bully nor noth'n! Oh, no, I reckon not! Why, Billy, it beats the Nonesuch, DON'T it?"

The duke allowed it did. They pawed the yaller-boys, and sifted them through their fingers and let them jingle down on the floor; and the king says:

“It ain’t no use talkin’; bein’ brothers to a rich dead man and representatives of furrin heirs that’s got left is the line for you and me, Bilge. Thish yer comes of trust’n to Providence. It’s the best way, in the long run. I’ve tried ‘em all, and ther’ ain’t no better way.”

Most everybody would a been satisfied with the pile, and took it on trust; but no, they must count it. So they counts it, and it comes out four hundred and fifteen dollars short. Says the king:

“Dern him, I wonder what he done with that four hundred and fifteen dollars?”

They worried over that awhile, and ransacked all around for it. Then the duke says:

“Well, he was a pretty sick man, and likely he made a mistake—I reckon that’s the way of it. The best way’s to let it go, and keep still about it. We can spare it.”

“Oh, shucks, yes, we can SPARE it. I don’t k’yer noth’n ‘bout that—it’s the COUNT I’m thinkin’ about. We want to be awful square and open and above-board here, you know. We want to lug this h-yer money up stairs and count it before everybody—then ther’ ain’t noth’n suspicious. But when the dead man says ther’s six thous’n dollars, you know, we don’t want to—”

“Hold on,” says the duke. “Le’s make up the deffisit,” and he begun to haul out yaller-boys out of his pocket.

“It’s a most amaz’n’ good idea, duke—you HAVE got a rattlin’ clever head on you,” says the king. “Blest if the old Nonesuch ain’t a heppin’ us out agin,” and HE begun to haul out yaller-jackets and stack them up.

It most busted them, but they made up the six thousand clean and clear.

“Say,” says the duke, “I got another idea. Le’s go up stairs and count this money, and then take and GIVE IT TO THE GIRLS.”

“Good land, duke, lemme hug you! It’s the most dazzling idea ‘at ever a man struck. You have cert’nly got the most astonishin’ head I ever see. Oh, this is the boss dodge, ther’ ain’t no mistake ‘bout it. Let ‘em fetch along their suspicions now if they want to—this ‘ll lay ‘em out.”

When we got up-stairs everybody gethered around the table, and the king he counted it and stacked it up, three hundred dollars in a pile—twenty elegant little piles. Everybody looked hungry at it, and licked their chops. Then they raked it into the bag again, and I see the king begin to swell himself up for another speech. He says:

"Friends all, my poor brother that lays yonder has done generous by them that's left behind in the vale of sorrers. He has done generous by these yer poor little lambs that he loved and sheltered, and that's left fatherless and motherless. Yes, and we that knowed him knows that he would a done MORE generous by 'em if he hadn't ben afeard o' woundin' his dear William and me. Now, WOULDN'T he? Ther' ain't no question 'bout it in MY mind. Well, then, what kind o' brothers would it be that 'd stand in his way at sech a time? And what kind o' uncles would it be that 'd rob—yes, ROB—sech poor sweet lambs as these 'at he loved so at sech a time? If I know William—and I THINK I do—he—well, I'll jest ask him." He turns around and begins to make a lot of signs to the duke with his hands, and the duke he looks at him stupid and leather-headed a while; then all of a sudden he seems to catch his meaning, and jumps for the king, goo-gooing with all his might for joy, and hugs him about fifteen times before he lets up. Then the king says, "I knowed it; I reckon THAT 'll convince anybody the way HE feels about it. Here, Mary Jane, Susan, Joanner, take the money—take it ALL. It's the gift of him that lays yonder, cold but joyful."

Mary Jane she went for him, Susan and the hare-lip went for the duke, and then such another hugging and kissing I never see yet. And everybody crowded up with the tears in their eyes, and most shook the hands off of them frauds, saying all the time:

"You DEAR good souls!—how LOVELY!—how COULD you!"

Well, then, pretty soon all hands got to talking about the diseased again, and how good he was, and what a loss he was, and all that; and before long a big iron-jawed man worked himself in there from outside, and stood a-listening and looking, and not saying anything; and nobody saying anything to him either, because the king was talking and they was all busy listening. The king was saying—in the middle of something he'd started in on—

"—they bein' partickler friends o' the diseased. That's why they're invited here this evenin'; but tomorrow we want ALL to come—everybody; for he respected everybody, he liked everybody, and so it's fitten that his funeral orgies sh'd be public."

And so he went a-mooning on and on, liking to hear himself talk, and every little while he fetched in his funeral orgies again, till the duke he couldn't stand it no more; so he writes on a little scrap of paper, "OBSEQUIES, you old fool," and folds it up, and goes to goo-gooing and reaching it over people's heads to him. The king he reads it and puts it in his pocket, and says:

"Poor William, afflicted as he is, his HEART'S aluz right. Asks me to invite everybody to come to the funeral—wants me to make 'em all welcome. But he needn't a worried—it was jest what I was at."

Then he weaves along again, perfectly ca'm, and goes to dropping in his funeral orgies again every now and then, just like he done before. And when he done it the third time he says:

"I say orgies, not because it's the common term, because it ain't — obsequies bein' the common term—but because orgies is the right term. Obsequies ain't used in England no more now—it's gone out. We say orgies now in England. Orgies is better, because it means the thing you're after more exact. It's a word that's made up out'n the Greek ORGO, outside, open, abroad; and the Hebrew JEESUM, to plant, cover up; hence inTER. So, you see, funeral orgies is an open er public funeral."

He was the WORST I ever struck. Well, the iron-jawed man he laughed right in his face. Everybody was shocked. Everybody says, "Why, DOCTOR!" and Abner Shackleford says:

"Why, Robinson, hain't you heard the news? This is Harvey Wilks."

The king he smiled eager, and shoved out his flapper, and says:

"Is it my poor brother's dear good friend and physician? I—"

"Keep your hands off of me!" says the doctor. "YOU talk like an Englishman, DON'T you? It's the worst imitation I ever heard. YOU Peter Wilks's brother! You're a fraud, that's what you are!"

Well, how they all took on! They crowded around the doctor and tried to quiet him down, and tried to explain to him and tell him how

Harvey 'd showed in forty ways that he WAS Harvey, and knowed everybody by name, and the names of the very dogs, and begged and BEGGED him not to hurt Harvey's feelings and the poor girl's feelings, and all that. But it warn't no use; he stormed right along, and said any man that pretended to be an Englishman and couldn't imitate the lingo no better than what he did was a fraud and a liar. The poor girls was hanging to the king and crying; and all of a sudden the doctor ups and turns on THEM. He says:

"I was your father's friend, and I'm your friend; and I warn you as a friend, and an honest one that wants to protect you and keep you out of harm and trouble, to turn your backs on that scoundrel and have nothing to do with him, the ignorant tramp, with his idiotic Greek and Hebrew, as he calls it. He is the thinnest kind of an impostor—has come here with a lot of empty names and facts which he picked up somewheres, and you take them for PROOFS, and are helped to fool yourselves by these foolish friends here, who ought to know better. Mary Jane Wilks, you know me for your friend, and for your unselfish friend, too. Now listen to me; turn this pitiful rascal out—I BEG you to do it. Will you?"

Mary Jane straightened herself up, and my, but she was handsome! She says:

"HERE is my answer." She hove up the bag of money and put it in the king's hands, and says, "Take this six thousand dollars, and invest for me and my sisters any way you want to, and don't give us no receipt for it."

Then she put her arm around the king on one side, and Susan and the hare-lip done the same on the other. Everybody clapped their hands and stomped on the floor like a perfect storm, whilst the king held up his head and smiled proud. The doctor says:

"All right; I wash MY hands of the matter. But I warn you all that a time 's coming when you're going to feel sick whenever you think of this day." And away he went.

"All right, doctor," says the king, kinder mocking him; "we'll try and get 'em to send for you;" which made them all laugh, and they said it was a prime good hit.

Chapter XXVI

WELL, when they was all gone the king he asks Mary Jane how they was off for spare rooms, and she said she had one spare room, which would do for Uncle William, and she'd give her own room to Uncle Harvey, which was a little bigger, and she would turn into the room with her sisters and sleep on a cot; and up garret was a little cubby, with a pallet in it. The king said the cubby would do for his valley—meaning me.

So Mary Jane took us up, and she showed them their rooms, which was plain but nice. She said she'd have her frocks and a lot of other traps took out of her room if they was in Uncle Harvey's way, but he said they warn't. The frocks was hung along the wall, and before them was a curtain made out of calico that hung down to the floor. There was an old hair trunk in one corner, and a guitar-box in another, and all sorts of little knickknacks and jimcracks around, like girls brisken up a room with. The king said it was all the more homely and more pleasanter for these fixings, and so don't disturb them. The duke's room was pretty small, but plenty good enough, and so was my cubby.

That night they had a big supper, and all them men and women was there, and I stood behind the king and the duke's chairs and waited on them, and the niggers waited on the rest. Mary Jane she set at the head of the table, with Susan alongside of her, and said how bad the biscuits was, and how mean the preserves was, and how ornery and tough the fried chickens was—and all that kind of rot, the way women always do for to force out compliments; and the people all knowed everything was tiptop, and said so—said "How DO you get biscuits to brown so nice?" and "Where, for the land's sake, DID you get these amaz'n pickles?" and all that kind of humbug talky-talk, just the way people always does at a supper, you know.

And when it was all done me and the hare-lip had supper in the kitchen off of the leavings, whilst the others was helping the niggers clean up the things. The hare-lip she got to pumping me about England, and blest if I didn't think the ice was getting mighty thin sometimes. She says:

"Did you ever see the king?"

"Who? William Fourth? Well, I bet I have—he goes to our church." I knowed he was dead years ago, but I never let on. So when I says he goes to our church, she says:

"What—regular?"

"Yes—regular. His pew's right over opposite ourn—on t'other side the pulpit."

"I thought he lived in London?"

"Well, he does. Where WOULD he live?"

"But I thought YOU lived in Sheffield?"

I see I was up a stump. I had to let on to get choked with a chicken bone, so as to get time to think how to get down again. Then I says:

"I mean he goes to our church regular when he's in Sheffield. That's only in the summer time, when he comes there to take the sea baths."

"Why, how you talk—Sheffield ain't on the sea."

"Well, who said it was?"

"Why, you did."

"I DIDN'T nuther."

"You did!"

"I didn't."

"You did."

"I never said nothing of the kind."

"Well, what DID you say, then?"

"Said he come to take the sea BATHS—that's what I said."

"Well, then, how's he going to take the sea baths if it ain't on the sea?"

"Looky here," I says; "did you ever see any Congress-water?"

"Yes."

"Well, did you have to go to Congress to get it?"

"Why, no."

"Well, neither does William Fourth have to go to the sea to get a sea bath."

"How does he get it, then?"

"Gets it the way people down here gets Congress-water—in barrels. There in the palace at Sheffield they've got furnaces, and he wants his

water hot. They can't bile that amount of water away off there at the sea. They haven't got no conveniences for it."

"Oh, I see, now. You might a said that in the first place and saved time."

When she said that I see I was out of the woods again, and so I was comfortable and glad. Next, she says:

"Do you go to church, too?"

"Yes—regular."

"Where do you set?"

"Why, in our pew."

"WHOSE pew?"

"Why, OURN—your Uncle Harvey's."

"His'n? What does HE want with a pew?"

"Wants it to set in. What did you RECKON he wanted with it?"

"Why, I thought he'd be in the pulpit."

Rot him, I forgot he was a preacher. I see I was up a stump again, so I played another chicken bone and got another think. Then I says:

"Blame it, do you suppose there ain't but one preacher to a church?"

"Why, what do they want with more?"

"What!—to preach before a king? I never did see such a girl as you. They don't have no less than seventeen."

"Seventeen! My land! Why, I wouldn't set out such a string as that, not if I NEVER got to glory. It must take 'em a week."

"Shucks, they don't ALL of 'em preach the same day—only ONE of 'em."

"Well, then, what does the rest of 'em do?"

"Oh, nothing much. Loll around, pass the plate—and one thing or another. But mainly they don't do nothing."

"Well, then, what are they FOR?"

"Why, they're for STYLE. Don't you know nothing?"

"Well, I don't WANT to know no such foolishness as that. How is servants treated in England? Do they treat 'em better 'n we treat our niggers?"

"NO! A servant ain't nobody there. They treat them worse than dogs."

“Don’t they give ‘em holidays, the way we do, Christmas and New Year’s week, and Fourth of July?”

“Oh, just listen! A body could tell YOU hain’t ever been to England by that. Why, Hare-l—why, Joanna, they never see a holiday from year’s end to year’s end; never go to the circus, nor theater, nor nigger shows, nor nowheres.”

“Nor church?”

“Nor church.”

“But YOU always went to church.”

Well, I was gone up again. I forgot I was the old man’s servant. But next minute I whirled in on a kind of an explanation how a valley was different from a common servant and HAD to go to church whether he wanted to or not, and set with the family, on account of its being the law. But I didn’t do it pretty good, and when I got done I see she warn’t satisfied. She says:

“Honest injun, now, hain’t you been telling me a lot of lies?”

“Honest injun,” says I.

“None of it at all?”

“None of it at all. Not a lie in it,” says I.

“Lay your hand on this book and say it.”

I see it warn’t nothing but a dictionary, so I laid my hand on it and said it. So then she looked a little better satisfied, and says:

“Well, then, I’ll believe some of it; but I hope to gracious if I’ll believe the rest.”

“What is it you won’t believe, Joe?” says Mary Jane, stepping in with Susan behind her. “It ain’t right nor kind for you to talk so to him, and him a stranger and so far from his people. How would you like to be treated so?”

“That’s always your way, Maim—always sailing in to help somebody before they’re hurt. I hain’t done nothing to him. He’s told some stretchers, I reckon, and I said I wouldn’t swallow it all; and that’s every bit and grain I DID say. I reckon he can stand a little thing like that, can’t he?”

“I don’t care whether ‘twas little or whether ‘twas big; he’s here in our house and a stranger, and it wasn’t good of you to say it. If you was

in his place it would make you feel ashamed; and so you oughtn't to say a thing to another person that will make THEM feel ashamed."

"Why, Maim, he said—"

"It don't make no difference what he SAID—that ain't the thing. The thing is for you to treat him KIND, and not be saying things to make him remember he ain't in his own country and amongst his own folks."

I says to myself, THIS is a girl that I'm letting that old reptle rob her of her money!

Then Susan SHE waltzed in; and if you'll believe me, she did give Hare-lip hark from the tomb!

Says I to myself, and this is ANOTHER one that I'm letting him rob her of her money!

Then Mary Jane she took another inning, and went in sweet and lovely again—which was her way; but when she got done there warn't hardly anything left o' poor Hare-lip. So she hollered.

"All right, then," says the other girls; "you just ask his pardon."

She done it, too; and she done it beautiful. She done it so beautiful it was good to hear; and I wished I could tell her a thousand lies, so she could do it again.

I says to myself, this is ANOTHER one that I'm letting him rob her of her money. And when she got through they all jest laid theirselves out to make me feel at home and know I was amongst friends. I felt so ornery and low down and mean that I says to myself, my mind's made up; I'll hive that money for them or bust.

So then I lit out—for bed, I said, meaning some time or another. When I got by myself I went to thinking the thing over. I says to myself, shall I go to that doctor, private, and blow on these frauds? No—that won't do. He might tell who told him; then the king and the duke would make it warm for me. Shall I go, private, and tell Mary Jane? No—I dasn't do it. Her face would give them a hint, sure; they've got the money, and they'd slide right out and get away with it. If she was to fetch in help I'd get mixed up in the business before it was done with, I judge. No; there ain't no good way but one. I got to steal that money, somehow; and I got to steal it some way that they won't suspicion that I done it. They've got a good thing here, and they ain't a-going to leave till

they've played this family and this town for all they're worth, so I'll find a chance time enough. I'll steal it and hide it; and by and by, when I'm away down the river, I'll write a letter and tell Mary Jane where it's hid. But I better hive it tonight if I can, because the doctor maybe hasn't let up as much as he lets on he has; he might scare them out of here yet.

So, thinks I, I'll go and search them rooms. Upstairs the hall was dark, but I found the duke's room, and started to paw around it with my hands; but I recollected it wouldn't be much like the king to let anybody else take care of that money but his own self; so then I went to his room and begun to paw around there. But I see I couldn't do nothing without a candle, and I dasn't light one, of course. So I judged I'd got to do the other thing—lay for them and eavesdrop. About that time I hears their footsteps coming, and was going to skip under the bed; I reached for it, but it wasn't where I thought it would be; but I touched the curtain that hid Mary Jane's frocks, so I jumped in behind that and snuggled in amongst the gowns, and stood there perfectly still.

They come in and shut the door; and the first thing the duke done was to get down and look under the bed. Then I was glad I hadn't found the bed when I wanted it. And yet, you know, it's kind of natural to hide under the bed when you are up to anything private. They sets down then, and the king says:

"Well, what is it? And cut it middlin' short, because it's better for us to be down there a-whoopin' up the mournin' than up here givin' 'em a chance to talk us over."

"Well, this is it, Capet. I ain't easy; I ain't comfortable. That doctor lays on my mind. I wanted to know your plans. I've got a notion, and I think it's a sound one."

"What is it, duke?"

"That we better glide out of this before three in the morning, and clip it down the river with what we've got. Specially, seeing we got it so easy—GIVEN back to us, flung at our heads, as you may say, when of course we allowed to have to steal it back. I'm for knocking off and lighting out."

这让我感觉很糟糕。 大约一个小时或两个以前将一直有点不同，但现在它让我感觉坏和失望的，国王撕裂出来说：

"什么！ 并不出售其余o'财产？ 三月像一批的傻瓜，保留八个或九个千'n'美元的价值o'酒店开始裁员绕开玩笑sufferin'要挖吗？—和所有良好，适于销售的东西了。"

公爵他抱怨；上述袋的金是不够的，并且他不想去有更深层次的—不是想要抢劫了很多孤儿的一切。

"为什么，你怎么说话说："国王。 "我们sha'n'不抢劫他们什么都没有但是开玩笑这笔钱。 人们买的酒店是的suff'rers；因为只要's它发现在我们没有它自己的—这不会很久之后，我们已经下滑的销售不会是有效的，它会有去回房地产。 揭掉这些孤儿的'll git他们的房子回阿恩，这足以让他们；他们是年轻和神采奕奕，以及k'n容易赚一个活着的话。 他们是不是布莱恩受到影响。 为什么,开玩笑想—有千'n'的和恩古都是这不是几乎所以及关闭。 祝福你，他们没有得到挽回'n'抱怨。"

好，国王，他谈到他的盲，所以最后他放弃，并说所有权利，但说，他认为这被归咎愚蠢的留，医生笼罩着他们。 但国王说：

"坏话的医生！ 我们怎么k揭掉他吗？ 海恩不我们得到了所有的傻瓜在镇上我们这边吗？ 并不是说一个足够大多数在任何城镇?"

因此，他们准备好走下楼梯。 公爵说：

"我不认为我们把这些钱中的一个很好的地方。"

那我欢呼。 我开始认为我警告不会得到一丝没有那种帮助我。 国王说：

"为什么？"

"因为玛丽珍会在哀悼从这出去，你先知道黑鬼没的房间将得到一个以框这些哑弹起来，并把他们带走；以及你认为一个黑人可以碰到钱，而不是借用一些了吗？"

"你的头的水平agin，公爵，说："国王和他来的-摸索下帷幕的两个或三个脚从我在哪儿。 我坚持严密的墙壁和保持强大不过，虽然quivery；和我想知道什么他们的家伙会对我说如果他们逮住我，我试图想什么我会做的更好，如果他们没有抓住我。 但国王，他得到了袋之前我能认为超过大约一半认为，他从来没有suspicioned我周围。 他们带走了猛袋通过扯在一根稻草打勾，这是羽毛床，挤在一只脚或两个之间的稻草，并说，这是所有的权利，因为一个黑人仅占的羽毛床，不要转过来的草勾仅仅大约每年两次，因此它警告不在的危险越来越偷了现在。

但我知道更好。 我离开那里之前他们是半路下楼梯。 我摸着我的小房间，并把它藏在那里直到我得到一个机会做得更好。 我判断，我最好躲起来这房子外面的什么地方，因为如果他们错过了，他们会得到这房子一个很好的洗劫：我知道，非常好。 然后我转身，跟我的衣服所有的；但是我无法一个去睡觉如果我一想到，我是在这样一汗获得通过的业务。 我听说国王和公爵来了，所以我滚开我的托盘，并奠定了用我的下巴在顶我的阶梯，并等着看如果有什么事情要发生。 但什么也没有。

所以我举行，直到所有的晚听起来不得不辞职，并在早期的那些还没有开始，然后我滑了下来的阶梯。

第二十七章

我蹑手蹑脚的大门，并听取了；它们是打鼾。 所以我踮着脚尖，并得到了楼下的所有权利。 有警告不一的声音，无论哪里. 我偷看穿过裂缝的餐厅门口，看到男子看到的尸体中所有的声音睡在他们的椅子。 门被打开到客厅，那里的尸体铺设，并有一个蜡烛在这两个房间。 我过去了，在客厅的门是开放的；但是我看到有警告，没人在那里，但在余下的彼得，所以我推上通过的；但是前门是锁着的，关键是不存在的。 就在那时我听到有人下楼回到我身后。 我在运行

客厅和采取迅速看看周围，唯一的地方，我看到隐藏袋是在棺材里。 盖子是猛沿着大约一英尺，显示死者男人的脸向下在那里，用湿布，他的护罩。 我塞钱袋子在下盖子，刚刚超出了他的双手交叉，这使我蠕变，他们是那么冷，然后我跑回来穿过房间在后面的门。

该人即将被玛丽珍。 她去了棺材，很柔软和跪下来看着；然后她把她的手帕，我看到她开始哭了,虽然我不能听到她，她回给我。 我滑了出来，并作为我通过了餐厅我想我会确保他们观察没看见我，所以我看着通过裂缝的，一切都是所有权利。 他们没有搅拌。

我滑倒了睡觉，感觉品质蓝色的，对客户的事情播放了这种方式后，我已经花了这么多麻烦和运行如此多的resk约。 我说，如果它能保持它在哪里，所有的权利；因为当我们得到顺流而下一百英哩或二，我可以写信回来，玛丽珍，和她可能挖他再次得到；但是，这并不是的东西那就是将要发生的事情会发生的情况是，这笔钱将被发现的，当他们来到螺旋上的盖子。 然后国王'll get it 再次，它会是一个漫长的一天之前他给别人一个机会，以smouch它从他。 当然我想滑下去，并得到它的存在，但我达森不尝试。 每一分钟，这是越来越早，现在，很快，他们中的一些观察家将开始蠢蠢欲动，并且我可能会得到逮住—逮住了六万美元在我的手里，没有人没有雇我来照顾。 我不希望被混合起来在没有此种业务的作为，我说到我自己。

当我走下楼梯在早客厅被关闭，观察家已经走了。 有警告不周围没有人但是家庭和寡妇和巴特利我们的部落。 我看着他们的脸上看到如果任何已经发生的事情，但我不能告诉。

对中间的一天，承办人来了他人，他们的棺材里在房间的中间的一对夫妇的椅子，然后设置我们所有的椅子在行和借入更多的邻国，直到大厅及大厅和餐厅是完整的。 我看到

棺材盖物的方式之前，但我达森不去看看在下
它，人们周围。

然后人们开始聚集在，和节奏和女孩采取了
席位在前排在头棺材，并且一个半小时的
提交人周围的缓慢，在单一的等级，看着死去的
人的脸一分钟，一些丢弃在一个撕裂，这一切都非常安静
和庄重，唯一的女孩和拍持手帕给他们的
眼睛和保持他们的头弯曲，而哭泣一点。 有警告，没有
其他的声音但是刮的脚在地板上和吹鼻子—
因为人们总是打击他们更加一个葬礼上比他们在
其他地方，除了教堂。

当地塞满了所承办，他滑围绕在他的
黑色手套与他多愁善感soothering的方式，把在最后一个接触，
并得到的人和事的所有船舶的形状和舒适，并且
没有更多的声音，比猫。 他从来没有发言；他移民
周围，他挤在晚的人，他打开了通道，并且完成它
有点头和迹象，他的手。 然后，他把他的位置对
的墙。 他是最柔软的，glidingest,加密等人我见；以及
有警告，没有更多的微笑他比有一个火腿。

他们借了一melodeum—一个生病的一个；而当一切都
准备好一个年轻女子定下工作，它是漂亮的
skreeky和腹痛，并且每个人都加入和成，彼得是
唯一一个有好事，根据我的观念。 那么
牧师霍布森打开了，慢和庄严，并且开始交谈；以及
直接关闭最无耻的行捣毁了在地窖里的一体曾经
听说过的；它只是一只狗，但是他做了一个最强大的球拍，他
保持它的权利；教区牧师，他不得不站在那里，在棺材，
并等待，—你不能听见自己的想法。 这是正确的下尴尬的，
并没有人似乎不知道该怎么做。 但很快，他们看到
那个长腿的承办单位使签署的牧师一样多来
说，"你不用担心只是依赖于我。" 然后他就弯下腰，
开始下滑沿墙，只是他的肩膀上表示过的
人民头上。 所以他滑行着，并巫师和球拍获得
更多的和更多的离谱所有的时间；以及最后，当他已经走了
两侧的房间，他就会消失下的酒窖。 然后在约

两秒钟，我们听到了一个重击，并狗他完成了一个最令人惊叹号啕大哭或两个，然后一切都是死，该牧师开始他的庄重谈他在哪里离开的地方。 在一两分钟，在这里，来这种殡仪事务承办人的背和肩膀上滑翔沿着墙；并使他滑翔和滑行，围绕三边的房间，然后升起来了，和阴影他的嘴他的手，伸出他的脖子上向牧师，在人们的头脑中，并说，在一种粗耳语，"他有一个老鼠！" 然后他就垂下来，滑翔着墙壁上再次到他的地方。 你可以看到它是一个非常满意地向人民，因为他们自然想要知道。 一件小事那样不费什么也没有，这只是小事情，让一个男人可以看到，很喜欢。 有警告没有多受欢迎的人在城里比什么意承办。

好吧，葬礼布道是很好的，但pison长和烦人；然后国王，他猛的和有关他的一些常rubbage，并在最后的工作是通过和承办人开始偷偷在与他的棺材钉驱动程序。 我在汗液然后，观看了他很热衷。 但他从来不插手；只是滑盖着柔软如玉米粥，并拧下来的紧密的和快速的。 因此，有我！我不知道是否这笔钱是在有或没有。 因此，我说，s pose有人挤兑那个袋子偷偷摸摸?—现在我怎么知道是否要写信给玛丽珍或没有？ S'pose她挖出他并没有发现什么都没有，她会怎么想我？ 怪了，我说，我可能会得到追捕和监禁；我最好躺低，并让黑暗的，没有写在所有的东西是可怕的混合现在想更好的了，我已经恶化，这一百倍，而且我希望善良的我只是让它单独的，爸爸取的整个商业！

他们埋葬他，我们回家，和我去看的脸再次—我不能帮助它，我不能休息容易。 但是什么来的；面没告诉我什么都没有。

国王，他访问了周围在晚上，甜大家都起来，并提出自己曾经那么友善；以及他得出的想法，他的教会通过在英国将是在一汗关于他，所以他必须快点解决了房地产的权利离开，离开家庭。 他很抱歉他是如此的推动，所以每个人；他们希望他能

停留更长的时间，但他们说，他们可以看到它不可能做到的。 和他说的当然他和威廉*将女孩的家庭有他们，
很高兴大家也一样，因为那女孩们会是很好的固定和
在他们自己的关系；它高兴的女孩，太逗乐他们
，使他们清理忘记他们曾经有一个麻烦的世界；并且告诉他
出卖尽快他希望，他们将做好准备。 他们可怜的东西
，很高兴和幸福的它让我的心脏疼痛要看到他们越来越骗
和骗了所以，但是我没有看到没有安全的方式对我的芯片和变革
大调整。

好吧，指责，如果国王没有比尔的房子和黑人所有
的财产拍卖的直销售两天的葬礼之后；但是，
任何人都可以购买私人事先如果他们想要的。

所以接下来的一天葬礼之后，沿着大约中午的时间，女孩子们的
快乐得到了第一个震撼。 一对夫妇的黑人商人一起来，国王
卖黑奴合理的，为期三天的草案，因为他们叫它，
并远离他们去，两个儿子了河孟菲斯，和他们的
母亲河，奥尔良。 我想他们可怜的女孩和他们的
黑人会打破他们心中的悲痛；他们的哭了周围每个方，
并采取了所以它最成我生病看到它。 女孩所述，他们
没有梦想看到的家庭分离或出售的远离
该镇。 我永远不能得到它从我的记忆中，他们的视线可怜的
可怜的女孩和黑奴挂在每个其他的脖子和
哭泣，我想我不能一个站在它所有的，但将一种已经破产出
和告诉我们的帮派如果我不知道该出售的警告没有帐户和
黑人将会回家一两个星期。

事情做了一个很大的轰动，在城镇，也和一个良好的许多来
出flatfooted，并说，这是可耻的独立母亲和
儿童的方式。 这受伤的欺诈行为的一些；但是个老傻瓜，他bulled
沿着正确的，尽管所有公爵可以说或做什么，我告诉你公爵
是强大的不安。

第二天被拍卖的一天。 关于广泛的天早的国王
和公爵来在阁楼，把我吵醒了，我看到他们的
看那有麻烦。 国王说：

"是你在我的房间前天晚上?"

"没有，陛下"—这是我一直叫他的时候
没有人但是，我们的团伙发出警告不周围。
"是你在那里yisterday er最后一晚?"
"不，陛下。"
"荣耀明亮，现在没有谎言"
"荣耀明亮，国王陛下，我要告诉你真相。 我hain不了
一个-靠近你的房间，因为玛丽珍小姐把你和公爵和
表明它对您。"
公爵说：
"你有没有看到任何人进去那里？"
"不，你的恩典，不如我记得，我相信。"
"停下来想一想."
我研究了一段时间看看我的机会；然后我说：
"好吧，我看到黑鬼去那里几次。"
他们两个给了一个小跳跃，并且看起来像他们没有
预计，然后像他们。 那么公爵说：
"什么，他们？"
"没有至少不是所有的在一次—是的，我不认为我曾经看到的
他们出来一次，但只是一时间。"
"你好！ 那是什么时候？"
"那一天，我们有葬礼。 在早晨。 它警告不早，
因为我睡过头了 我刚开始下降的阶梯，而且我看到他们。"
"好吧，去吧，去吧! 他们做了什么？ 他们怎么行动？"
"他们什么都没做 他们没有行为无论如何，作为皮毛
我看到的。 他们踮着脚尖走；因此我见过的，很容易，那他们会把在
那里做了国王陛下的房间，或者东西,s'posing你为；
和找到了你警告不起,所以他们希望以幻灯片的
方式的麻烦，而不吵醒你了，如果他们不是已经醒来你
。"
"伟大的枪支，这是一个去！说："国王；以及他们两个看起来
漂亮病和容忍的愚蠢的。 他们站在那里一个思考和抓
他们的头一分钟，公爵，他的胸部变成了一种有点刺耳的
轻笑，并说：
"它不会击败所有的如何整齐的黑人发挥他们的手。 他们让上
要对不起他们正要出去的这个地区！ 我相信他们

很抱歉，所以没有你，所以没有大家。 永远不要告诉我
任何更多的是一个黑人是不会得到任何戏剧性的人才。 为什么，他们的方式
玩过那东西它会欺骗任何人。 在我看来，有一个
财富'em。 如果我有的资本和剧院，我不想一个更好的躺下-
出比—在这里，我们已经走了，出售他们为歌曲。 是的，
是不是有特权的唱这首歌呢。 说的，是那首歌—这
草案？ "

"在银行是收集。 在那里会是什么?"

"嗯，这是所有权利，那么，谢天谢地。"

我说，那种胆怯样：

"东西消失了？ "

国王萦绕在我身上撕裂出：

"没有o'你的事！ 你保持你的头部共用的，并记住y'r自己
事务—如果你有任何的。 只要你在这个小镇你不forgit
—你听到了吗？ " 然后，他说，公爵，"我们要开玩笑swaller它
并说诺斯'n':妈妈的这个词对于我们。"

因为他们已开始下降的阶梯公爵他笑再次，
说：

"快速的销售和小型的利润！ 这是一个良好的商业—是的。"

国王周围挤塞对他说：

"我想做的最好的出卖他们这么快。 如果的
利润已证明是没有的，缺位'considable，并没有进行，是
我的错任何更多的恩这是花你的钱呢?"

"好吧，它们会在这所房子但我们不会如果我能
一个得到我的建议倾听。"

国王sassed回尽可能安全用于他，然后交换
周围和点燃到我了。 他给我下来该银行未来
并告诉他我看到黑鬼来了他的房间作这
样—说任何傻瓜都会知道的东西了。 然后
轻松自如在和讨论自己一段时间，并说这一切来的他不
躺下旬，并把他自然休息，天早晨，他被指责，如果
他想再次这样做。 所以他们去了一个-唧唧歪歪；并且我感到可怕的很高兴
我做过的所有关到黑人，但没有做过的事情的黑鬼没有
伤害它.

第二十八章

通过和通过它得到的时间。 所以我下来的阶梯，并开始
下楼梯，但正如我前来的女孩房间的门是开着的，我
看见玛丽珍定由她的老头发干线，这是开放的，她
已经打包东西了—准备好去英格兰. 但她
现在停止与折服于她的腿上，和她的脸在她的
手中，哭泣。 我觉得太可怕了不好的看到它；当然有人会。 我去了
那里，说：

"玛丽珍小姐，你不能一个熊看到人们有麻烦了，和我
不能—大部分总是. 告诉我吧。"

所以她这样做。 这是黑人—我只是预期。 她说
美丽的旅程到英格兰是大多数关于被宠坏了她；她不
知道她是如何都会很高兴的还有，知道母亲
和儿童的警告永远不会看到对方没有更多—然后
捣毁了怨恨比以往任何时候都扔了她的手，并说：

"哦，亲爱的，亲爱的，觉得他们是不会看到对其他任何
多！"

"但他们会和内部的两个星期—我知道它!"说
I.

法律的，这是出来之前，我可以认为! 和之前我可以让步，她
将她的手臂搂着我的脖子，并告诉我说一遍，再说
一遍，再说一次！

我看到我已经讲的太突然说得太多，而是在一个关闭
的地方。 我问她让我想一分钟；以及她在那里，非常
耐心和兴奋和英俊的，但是在寻找那种快乐和
放宽了，就像一个人那就是有一颗牙拔了。 所以我去
研究它。 我对自己说的，我估计一个机构，起诉的
事实，他是在紧张的地方就是把相当多的resks,
虽然我不是没有经验，并不能说对于某些；但是它看起来所以
我说，无论如何，但这里的情况下，我祝福，如果它看起来不到
我喜欢的事实是更好的和actuly比较安全的一个谎言。 我必须把它放在
我的头脑，并且认为它在某些时间或其他，这是以一种奇怪和
unregular. 我从来没有看到什么喜欢它。 好了，我对自己说，最后，我
要的机会，我会告诉真相的这段时间，但它确实似乎

最喜欢kag的粉末和触摸它只是为了看看
你会去。 然后我说:

"玛丽珍小姐，有没有任何地方出城的一个小小的地方在哪里
你可以去和住三个或四天呢？"

"是的，先生，斯洛普-是. 为什么？"

"不介意为什么呢。 如果我告诉你我怎么知道的黑人会看到
各方再次内部的两个星期—在这里，在这个房子，并证明
如何我知道—你会去斯洛普-先生和住四天？"

"四天！"她说，"我会留下来的一年！"

"好的，"我说，"我不想要什么更多你不仅仅是
你的话—我druther有比另一个人的亲的圣经"。 她
笑了笑脸红了很甜，和我说，"如果你不介意的话，我会
关上门—和螺栓。"

然后我回来设置下来，并说:

"你不大声叫喊. 只是仍然设置并把它像个男人。 我得告诉
真的，你要振作起来,玛丽小姐，因为这是一个坏的样，
将难以接受，但没有任何帮助。 这些叔叔的
不知道原是不是没有的叔叔；他们是一对夫妇的欺诈行为经常死
的节拍。 那里，现在我们在最糟糕的，你可以忍受的其他
中等容易。"

它动摇了她喜欢的一切，当然，但我是超过浅滩
水了，所以我去了沿着正确的，她的眼睛-超高所有
的时间，并告诉她的每个怪的事情，从那里我们第一次袭击的那个
年轻的傻瓜去的汽船，明确通过到她把
她自己上来国王的乳腺在前门和他吻了她十六
七岁的时候—然后她跳跃， 她的脸像着火
的日落，并说:

"蛮! 来吧，不要浪费一分钟—不—我们会
有他们的柏油和羽毛，扔在河里了！"

我说:

"证书'nly. 但你的意思是在你走之前，先生，斯洛普-是的，或者—
"

"哦"，她说，"我在想什么!"她说道，并设定
正确的。 "不介意我说什么—请不要—你不会的，
现在，你愿意吗？" 铺设了她柔滑的手在矿井在那样的一种方式

我说我会先死. "我从未想到，我是这么激起了"她说，"现在去吧，我不会这样做的任何更多。 你告诉我要做什么，并且不管你说什么我会这样做。"

"好的，"我说，"这是一个粗略的团伙，他们两个骗子，我是固定的，所以我要与他们旅行的一段时间，我是否想到或没有—我druther不告诉你为什么；如果你是来打击他们这个城镇会把我赶出他们的爪子，我会很好的，但还会有另一个人，你不知道谁会在大麻烦。 好吧，我们得救他，海恩不是吗? 当然。 好吧，那么，我们不会打击他们"。

说他们的话把一个很好的想法在我的脑海。 我怎么看也许我可以得到我和吉姆脱欺诈行为；得到他们被监禁在这里，然后离开。 但我不想跑筏在白天没有人登上回答问题，但我，所以我不想的计划开始工作，直到很晚晚。 我说：

"玛丽珍小姐，我告诉你，我们将做什么，你不会有住在斯洛普-先生很长，nuther. 如何毛皮？ "

"一个小短的四英里—就在该国，回到这里。"

"嗯，这'll的答案。 现在你走出去，以及奠定低到九点半到晚上，然后让他们来接你回家了—告诉他们你所想的东西。 如果你得到这里之前的十一把蜡烛在这个窗户，如果我不打开了等待，直到十一点，那么如果我不把它意味着我走了，出的方式和安全。 然后你出来传播新闻的周围，并得到这些节奏被判入狱。"

"良好"，她说，"我会做到这一点。"

"如果它只是发生所以，我不会离开，但是获得了沿他们，你必须说我告诉过你的整个事情之前，你必须站在我的所有你可以。"

"站在你！ 事实上，我会的。 他们sha'n'不摸头发你的头！"她说道，我看到她的鼻孔扩散和她的眼睛卡时，她说，这一点。

"如果我走我sha'n'不能在这里，"我说，"为了证明这些恶棍不是你的叔叔，我不能这样做，如果我在这里。 我可以发誓他们是节奏和缺点，这就是，虽然这是值得的东西。 好了，

还有其他人可以做比这更好的有什么我可以和他们是人，是不会被怀疑为迅速，因为我会. 我会告诉你如何找到他们。 给我一支铅笔一张纸。 那里—'皇家异兽, Bricksville.' 把它拿走，不要失去它。 当法院要找出一些关于这两个，让他们送到Bricksville，并说他们已经得到了男性，发挥了皇家异兽，并询问一些证人—为什么，你就会有整个小镇这里之前，你可以几乎不眨眼，玛丽小姐. 他们会来的-碧凌。"

我判断，我们已经得到的一切固定关于现在。 所以我说:

"只是让我们拍卖去沿着正确的，并不用担心。 没有人不必须为此付出代价的事情，他们购买，直到一整天的拍卖后上账户的简短的通知，他们是不是要出去的这个，直到他们得到的钱；我们已经固定的销售是不会数数，他们是不会得到任何钱。 这只是喜欢它的方式是与黑鬼—它发出警告没有销售，而黑人会回来之前长时间。为什么，他们可以不收钱的黑鬼呢—他们在最坏的一种修复，小姐，玛丽。"

"好吧"她说，"我会跑下来吃早餐，然后我就会开始觉先生，斯洛普-"。

"'契约，是不是，玛丽珍小姐，"我说，"通过没有方式的装置；去之前早餐。"

"为什么？"

"什么你认为我想让你走所有的，玛丽小姐?"

"好吧，我从来没有想过—和仔细想想，我不知道。 是什么它？"

"为什么，那是因为你不是一些皮革脸的人。 我不想没有更好的书，比什么你的脸。 一个主体可以设置下来和读取它喜欢粗打印。 你看你可以去面对你的叔叔他们来的时候吻你好-早上好，永不"

"在那里，那里，不要！ 是的，我会去之前早餐—我会很高兴。离开我的姐妹与他们吗？"

"是的，永远记住关于他们。 他们得忍受又一段时间。他们可能会怀疑的东西如果你们要走。 我不想你看到他们，也不是你的姐姐，也不是没有人在这个镇；如果邻居问你叔叔今天早上你的脸上会告诉一些东西。

不，你去右边走，玛丽珍小姐，我会解决它与所有的人。
我会告诉苏珊小姐给你爱给你叔叔说你已经走
走几个小时得到一点点休息和变化或者看一个朋友，
你会回来的-夜或清晨。"

"去看一个朋友是所有的权利，但是我不会有我的爱给
他们"。

"好吧，那么，它sha'n't be." 它是好的告诉她这么—没有
伤害它. 这只是一个小小的事情要做，没有任何麻烦；这是
小事情，平滑的人是道路上最多的，下来这里下面；这
将使玛丽*简舒服，而且它不会成本什么都没有。 然后我
说："有一件事情—那袋里的金钱。"

"好吧，它们就是我的；以及它让我觉得相当愚蠢的认为
怎么他们得到了它。"

"不,你出，有。 他们hain不会得到它."

"为什么,是谁得到了？"

"我希望我知道，但我不知道。 我不得不，因为我偷了它从他们；
我偷了它给你，我知道我在哪里藏了起来，但我恐怕这
是不是有没有更多。 我很可怕对不起，玛丽珍小姐，我只是对不起因为
我可以，但我做最好的，我可以，我有没有说实话。 我来越来越近了
抓住了，我得把它推到第一个地方，我来到，并且运行，
它警告不良好的地方。"

"哦，停止责怪你自己—这太糟糕了做到这一点，我不允许
—你不能帮助它；它不是你的错 你在哪里隐藏它？"

我不想置她想她的麻烦再次和我
似乎不能得到我的嘴告诉她什么会让她看到那
具尸体躺在棺材里的那袋钱在他的胃。 因为
一分钟我没有说什么；然后我说：

"我想品质不告诉您我把它放在哪里，玛丽珍小姐，如果您
不介意让我断；但我会写给你的一张纸，
你可以读它沿着道路斯洛普-先生，如果你想要的。 做
你认为'll do?"

"噢，yes。"

所以我写道："我把它放在棺材里。 它是在那里当你是
哭了那里，在晚上。 我身后的门，我是强大的
对不起你，小姐，玛丽珍。"

它让我的眼睛水一点要记住她哭了那里的所有通过自己的晚上，他们魔鬼铺设，有权根据她自己的屋顶，羞辱她和抢劫她的；并且当我折起来，并得到它给她我看到水进入她的眼睛，也和她握我的手，困难，并说：

"再见。 我要做的一切只是因为你已经告诉我，如果我曾经不再见到你，我sha'n'永远不会忘记你，我会认为你有许多人和许多时候，我会为你祈祷呢！"—她已经走了。

为我祈祷！ 我觉得如果她知道我的她会带一份工作，是更接近她的大小。 但我敢打赌，她做到了，只是相同的—她只是这样。 她的砂砾，以祈祷Judus如果她把这一概念—有警告没有回到她,我的判断。 你可以说你想要什么，但是在我看来她已经更加沙在她比任何一个女孩我看到；在我意见她就是充满沙子。 这听起来喜欢奉承的，但它不是奉承。 当它涉及到美和天哪，太—她勾画了他们所有。 我hain没见过她自那时以来，我看到她走出那扇门，没有，我hain没见过她，但我想我已经想到她有多以及许多一百万次了，她说她要祈祷的对我来说；以及如果有的话我会以为它会做任何对我好祈祷她指责，如果我不做或胸部。

好吧，玛丽*简她点燃了回来的方式，我认为，因为没有人看看她走. 当我袭击了苏珊和野兔唇，我说：

"叫什么名字他们的人过上t'other侧河你们都去看看吗？"

他们说:

"没有几个，但这是普罗克特，主要是。"

"这是名字，"我说，"我最忘了它。 好吧，玛丽珍小姐她告诉我告诉你她去过那里一个可怕的快点之一—他们的病。"

"其中一个吗？"

"我不知道，至少，我亲切的忘记了，但我认为这是—"

"好活着，我希望它是不是HANNER?"

"我很抱歉说它的，"我说，"但是Hanner是非常之一。"

"我的天，她以及只有最后一个星期！ 是她带坏？"

"这不是没有名称。 他们设置了她所有的夜晚，玛丽小姐Jane说，他们不认为她会去的许多个小时。"

"只是觉得那，现在！ 什么是她？ "

我不能想到什么合理，对关闭这样，所以我说：

"流行性腮腺炎。"

"流行性腮腺炎你的奶奶! 他们不会设立人，有的

流行性腮腺炎。"

"他们不要，不要他们? 你最好打赌他们做的这些流行性腮腺炎。 这些流行性腮腺炎的是不同的。 这是一种新的，玛丽珍小姐所说的。"

"它怎么一个新的类型的？ "

"因为它跟其他的东西。"

"什么其他的事情吗？ "

"好了，麻疹和百日咳和erysiplas，

消耗、和黄色janders和大脑发热，我不知道什么

。"

"我的土地！ 他们叫它的流行性腮腺炎?"

"这是玛丽珍小姐所说的。"

"那么，在国家做他们叫它流行性腮腺炎？ "

"为什么，因为它是流行性腮腺炎。 这就是它开始"。

"好了，那里不是没有意义。 一个主体可能会树桩他的脚趾，

采取pison,并且掉下来，并打破他的脖子和胸部他的大脑出，有人来要求什么杀了他，一些傻瓜说，'为什么，他难住了他的脚趾。' 会有'以任何意义吗？ 没有。 并且那里'不是没有意义，在此，nuther. 它是ketching?"

"这是KETCHING? 为什么，你怎么说话。 是哈罗捕的—在黑暗中? 如果你不顺利，有一颗牙齿，你们就能在另一个，是不是你？ 你不能摆脱这牙齿不获取整个哈罗，你能吗？ 嗯，这种流行性腮腺炎是一种一个哈罗，你可以说—这不是懒散的一个哈罗，nuther，你来把它拴好"。

"嗯，这太可怕了，我想说，"野兔唇。 "我会去哈维叔叔和"

"哦，是的，"我说，"我会的。 当然我会的。 我不会失去
没有时间。"

"嗯，为什么你不会？ "

"只要看看这一分钟，也许你可以看到。 海恩不你的叔叔 obleegd得回家给英格兰一样快，因为他们可以吗？ 你估计他们将会意味着足够去了，让你去所有的旅程通过自己吗？ 你知道，他们会等你的。 所以毛皮，很好。你叔叔哈维的一个牧师，是不是他？ 很好，然后，是一个牧师去欺骗一个汽船员? 他要欺骗一个船员? —以让他们让玛丽珍小姐去上船? 现在你知道他是不是。 他会做些什么，然后呢？ 为什么，他会说，这是一个很大的遗憾，但是我教教会的事项有着最好的方式，他们可以，我的侄女已经暴露的可怕的平菇-unum 流行性腮腺炎，因此它是我义不容辞的责任落在这里等待三个月需要显示她如果她得到了它。' 但永远记住，如果你认为这是最好的告诉你叔叔哈维—"

"哪里哪里，留在这里鬼混的时候，我们可能都是具有良好的时候在英格兰虽然我们正等着要找出是否玛丽*简*有或没有？ 为什么你说话像个笨蛋."

"好吧，也许你最好告诉一些邻居。"

"听着在那，现在。 你打败所有自然雪堆. 不能你看，他们会去告诉？ 有'不是没有办法，但只是不告诉任何人。"

"好吧，也许你是对的—是的，我你的判断是正确的。"

"但我觉得我们应该告诉叔叔哈维她已经走了出去一会儿，无论如何，所以他不会担心她吗？ "

"是的，玛丽珍小姐，她要你做到这一点。 她说，告诉他们给哈维叔叔和威廉*我的爱人和一个吻，说我跑过来的河看到先生—先生—叫什么名字，丰富家庭你叔叔彼得*曾经以为这么多的吗？ —我的意思是这个，—"

"为什么，你必须意味着Apthorps，不是吗？ "

"当然，困扰他们的那种名称，身体不能永远看来记住他们，有一半的时间，不知何故。 是的，她说说她已经运行为问Apthorps，以确保走向拍卖和买

这套房子，因为她让她的叔叔彼得会品质，他们把它
比任何其他人；并且她会坚持他们，直到他们说他们会
进来，然后，如果她是不是太累了，她回来，如果她是，
她会回家早上无论如何。 她说，不要说什么约
的普罗克特，但只有Apthorps—这会是完全正确的，
因为她是去那里说他们买的房子，我知道
，因为她告诉我自己。"

"所有权"，他们说，清除了放他们的叔叔，给
他们的爱情和亲吻，并告诉他们的消息。

一切都是所有权利。 女孩不会说什么
因为他们想要去英国国王和公爵将
小马丁玛丽珍，是关闭的工作对于拍卖，比周围在到达的
医生罗宾逊。 我感觉非常好；我判断，我已经做了很整齐的—我
认为汤姆*索亚不能完成它没有整洁自己。 当然他
会扔更多的风格进入它，但是我不能这样做很方便的，不
是带它。

嗯，他们举行了拍卖在公共广场，沿着朝向
结束当天下午，它串沿，并成，沿着和老
人，他是在一方面和在寻找他的水平pisonest，有longside的
拍卖，并碎裂在一个小小的圣经现在，然后，或者一点
点心-好说的一样，公爵他是周围的咕-
孩子们同情所有他知道如何，仅仅是扩展自己
generly.

但是，通过和通过的东西拖过，一切都被卖了—
一切，但一个小小的旧微不足道的很多的墓地。 所以他们会得到了
工作，—我从来没有看到这样一个girafft为国王是想
吞下的一切。 好吧，虽然他们是在它的一个汽船降落，
并在大约两分钟内起来一群人了-百日咳和大喊大叫，
笑和携带，和唱歌：

"这就是你的反对。 这是你的两套o'老人的继承人
彼得*威尔克斯—你付给你的钱，你需要你的选择！"

第一章第二十九号

他们是获取一个非常好看的老绅士，以及一个很好-
找一个年轻的，他的右臂在一个吊带。 而且，我的灵魂怎样
的人大声笑了起来，并保持它。 但是我没有看到没有开玩笑
，我的判断会变公爵和国王一看到
任何。 我估计他们会变得苍白。 但是，没有，没淡了他们打开。 在
杜克大学，他从来没有让他suspicioned什么的，但只是去了一个咕-
孩子们周围，高兴和满意，像一个壶，这是谷歌上搜索了
牛奶；以及作为国王，他只是注视着和凝视着悲伤
对他们的新来者喜欢给他的胃痛，在他的非常心
认为可能有这样的欺诈行为和无赖的世界。 哦，他这样做
就令人钦佩。 许多主要的人gethered约国王，让
他看看他们是在他的边。 那个老绅士，刚刚来
看过所有的疑惑的死亡。 很快，他开始讲话，我看
下他明显像一个英国人—不是国王的方式，
虽然国王是很好的一个模仿。 我不能给老
绅士的话来说，我也不能模仿他，但他变成周围的人群，
并说，有关这样的：

"这是给我一个惊喜哪我是不是在寻找，我会
承认，坦率和弗兰克，我是不是很好固定的，以满足它并
回答，因为我哥哥和我都有了不幸，他打断了他的
胳膊，我们的行李拿到了把在一个小镇上述这里昨晚在
夜通过了一个错误。 我是彼得*威尔克斯的弟弟哈维，而这是他的
兄弟威廉，不能听到，也没有说话，甚至不能使迹象
，数额为多，现在，他不是只有一方面的工作。 我们
是谁，我们说我们是和在一天或两天，当我得到行李，我
可以证明这一点。 但直到那时，我不会说什么更多，但是去酒店
和等待"。

所以他和新的开始；以及国王，他的笑声，
blethers出：

"打断了他的手臂—很有可能的，不是吗？ —和非常方便，
也为欺诈行为，得出的迹象，而不是学会如何。 失去了他们

行李！ 这是强大的好！—和强大的巧妙—下
情况下！"

所以他又笑了；因此，没有其他人一样，除了三个或四个，或者，也许一半，十几个。 其中之一是医生；另一个是一个尖锐的看绅士，一个地毯-bag老式的种做地毯-东西，刚刚掉下来的轮船和他说话小声，并看了一眼朝的国王现在，然后点头头—是Levi钟，该律师已经走了多达路易斯维尔; 另一个是大粗糙的沙哑，并听取了所有的老绅士说，听到的王的现在。 当国王做了这个纸上说:

"我说，听我说，如果你是哈维*威尔克斯，当你来到这个镇?"

"在一天前的葬礼上，朋友说："国王。

"但什么时候o'一天？"

"在晚—什么叫一个小时er两个之前的日落。"

"你怎么来的?"

"我下来苏珊*鲍威尔离辛辛那提。"

"好吧，那么，你怎么来了Pint在早上—在独木舟?"

"我警告不在品脱的清晨."

"这是一个谎言。"

他们跳为他并恳求他不要那样说要一个老人和一个牧师。

"传道者被绞死了，他是个骗子和一个骗子。 他是在品脱的那天早上. 我住在那里，不是吗？ 好吧，我上去，他是在那里。 我看到他在那里。 他的独木舟，随着蒂姆*柯林斯和一个男孩。"

医生，他说:

"你知道这孩子再次如果你是看到他，海因斯?"

"我想我会的，但我不知道。 为什么，那是他，现在。 我知道的他完全容易的。"

这是我，他指出在。 医生说:

"邻居，我不知道是否对新婚夫妇是欺诈或没有；但是，如果这两个是不是骗子，我是个白痴，就是这样。 我认为这是我们的

义务确保他们不离开这里直到我们已经看到这样
的事情。 走吧，海因斯；来，其余的你。 我们将把这些
研究员的小酒馆和侮辱他们有t'other的夫妇，并且我认为
我们会查出来的东西之前，我们获得通过。"

这是疯子的人群，虽然也许不是为国王的朋友，因此
我们所有开始。 它是关于日落。 医生他领导着我的
手，而是哪一种足够的，但是他永远不会放开我的手。

我们都得到了在一个大房间的酒店，并点燃了一些蜡烛，
取在新夫妇。 第一，医生说：

"我不想要太为难这两个男子，但我觉得他们在
欺诈行为，他们可能已经每天填，我们不知道的事情。
如果他们拥有的，不会每天填带走那袋金彼得*
威尔克斯离开了? 这不是不可能的。 如果这些人是不是欺诈行为，他们不会对象
来发送这笔钱，让我们使它保持，直到他们证明他们是所有
权—不是这样的吗？"

每个人都同意这一点。 因此我判断，他们有我们的帮派在一个相当
紧张的地方就在outstart. 但国王，他只看起来很悲伤，
并说：

"先生，我希望这笔钱是有的，对我没有得到任何
处置扔任何东西的一个公正、公开、出
调查o'这misable业务；但是，可惜的是，这些钱是不是那里，
你k'n送和看到的，如果你想要的。"

"在哪里是它，然后呢？"

"好了，当我的侄女得到它的我保持对她的我了，并把它藏
内部o'草勾o'我的床上，不能期盼银行，它为几天
我们会在这里，considerin'的床一个安全的地方，我们不被用于
黑人和suppos'n'他们诚实，像仆人在英国。 的黑人
偷走了它的第二天早上之后我就下楼梯；以及当我
卖了他们我没有错过了钱yit，使他们得到了清理。
我的仆人在这里k'n告诉你什么叫它，先生们。"

医生和几所述的"胡说！"，我看没有人没有
完全相信他的话。 一个男人问我，如果我看到黑鬼偷。 我
说没有，但我看到他们溜出房间和仓促地，我
从来没有想过什么都没有，只有我估计他们是害怕它们已经醒来
了我的老师和试图离开之前他做了麻烦

它们。 这是所有他们问我。 然后医生的旋风对我说:

"你的英语吗? "

我说是的，他和其他一些人嘲笑说，"东西"

好吧，那么他们航行于一般性调查，还有我们有了它，上下，小时，小时，并没有人从来没有说过一个字有关的晚餐，也似乎认为关于它的—所以他们保存起来，并保持它；而这是最糟糕混合的事情你有没有看到。 他们做了国王告诉他的纱线和他们的老先生告诉他的'n'; 和任何人，但很多偏见的傻瓜就看到，老先生是纺真相和t'other一个谎言。 和他们让我来告诉什么我知道. 国王，他给我一个左手看看他的眼角，所以我知道，足以帮你的右侧。 我开始告诉谢菲尔德，我们如何生活在那里，所有有关文Wilkses，等等；但是我没有漂亮的皮毛直到医生开始笑；以及利维钟，律师说:

"设置下来，我的孩子，我不应变自己，如果我是你。 我觉得你是不是用于在撒谎，它不似乎来方便;你想要什么是的做法。 你做的很尴尬。"

我不在乎什么的恭维，但是我很高兴能让断，无论如何。

医生，他开始说些什么，以及实证明说:

"如果你想在小镇首先，Levi钟"国王破门而入伸出他的手，并说:

"为什么，这是我的可怜的死去的哥哥的老朋友，他是这么写的经常有关吗? "

律师和他握手，律师微笑着看着高兴和他们谈沿着正确的一段时间，然后得到一个侧面和交谈过低；以及最后律师说起来说:

"就'll fix it. 我会采取的顺序和发送它，与你的兄弟，然后他们就会知道它的所有权利。"

因此，他们得到了一些纸和笔，和国王，他下和扭曲了他的头部向一侧，并chawed他的舌头和潦草的关的东西；以及然后他们给笔公爵—然后为第一

时间的公爵看病。 但是他把笔和写。 所以后来的
律师转向新的老绅士说:

"你和你的兄弟请写一两行，并签署你
名字。"

老先生写的，但没有人不能阅读。 律师
看着强大的惊讶，并说:

"好吧，它击败我"—而蜿蜒很多老的字母了他的
口袋，并审查了它们，然后审查了老男人的书写，
然后他们再次；然后说："这些旧信件是从哈维*
威尔克斯，在这里的这两种笔迹，而且任何人都可以看到他们
没有写他们的"(国王和公爵看出售和愚蠢的，我告诉
你，看看如何律师不得不把他们中)， "在这里的这个老
绅士的手写作，而且任何人都可以告诉，便足够了，他没有
写他们—事实是，划痕他是不正确地写在
所有的。 现在，这里的一些信件—"

新老先生说:

"如果请你，让我解释一下。 没有人可以读取我的手但是我的
兄弟—所以他的副本对于我。 这是他的手你已经到了那里，不是
我的。"

"好!"律师说，"这是一个国家的事情。 我已经得到了一些
威信，也因此如果你们让他写了一行，或因此，我们可以
com"

"他不会写他的左手说，"老绅士。 "如果他
可以用他的右手，你会看到他写他自己的信件和
地雷。 看看这两者，请他们通过相同的手"。

律师这样做，并说:

"我认为它是如此—如果它是不是这样，那里有一堆强
相似之处比我注意到，无论如何。 好，好，好! 我以为
我们是正确的轨道的一个解决方案，但它已经走了草，部分。 但
无论如何，有一件事证明了这两个不是的他们
Wilkses"他摇摇他的头向国王和公爵。

嗯，你怎么想? 这muleheaded老傻瓜就不会得到在
那! 事实上，他不会的。 说它的警告没有公平的考验。 说他的兄弟
威廉的cussedest小丑的世界，并没有试图写的—
他看到威廉要发挥他的一个玩笑的他把

笔纸。 因此，他升上去鸣叫的权利，直到他
是actuly开始相信他在说什么自己;但是
很快，新的绅士打破了在，并说：

"我想的东西。 有没有人在这里，帮助奠定
我br—帮助奠定了晚彼得*威尔克斯，用于掩埋?"

"是的，"有人说，"我和Ab-特纳这样做。 我们都是
在这里"。

然后老人会转向国王说：

"也许，这位绅士可以告诉我什么是在他的纹身
乳房？"

指责，如果国王不需要振作起来的强大的快速、或他会有
squshed下降喜欢虚张声势银行，河已经剪下，他花了
太突然了；以及，请不要忘记，这是一件事，经计算，使
大多数人sqush得到获取这样一个坚实的一个为，没有
任何通知，因为他怎么会知道什么是纹身的
男人？ 他白一点；他帮不了它，它是强大的仍然在
那里，每个人都弯一点点转发和凝视着他。 说我
自己，现在他会把海绵—没有没有更多的使用。
好吧，不是吗？ 一体不能很难相信，但他没有这样做。 我估计他
以为他会让事情，直到他厌倦了他们的人出来，所以他们会
变薄，他和公爵可以打破松脱身。 无论如何，
他没有，很快，他开始笑，并说：

"Mf! 这是一个非常艰难的问题，是不是! 是的，先生，我k'n告诉你
什么纹在了他的乳房。 这是开玩笑一个小的,瘦的，蓝色的箭头—那
它是什么；如果你看起来不京广，你不能看到它。 现在你怎么
说—嘿?"

好吧，我从来没有看到任何喜欢那个旧水泡用于清理和出
脸颊。

新老先生转快向Ab特纳和他的同伴,
和他的眼睛的灯光，如他判断，他有国王的这段时间，并
说：

"有—你听到他说什么! 是否有任何这样的标记上
彼得*威尔克斯的乳房?"

他们两人的发言，并说：

"我们没有看到没有这样的标记。"

"好!"说老绅士。 "现在，你有没有看到他的
乳房是一个小昏暗的P和一个B(这是一个最初他下降，当
他年轻的)，和一个W，他们之间的破折号，所以：P—B—W"—
和他标记他们的方式在一张纸上。 "来吧，是不是什么
你看到的？"

他们都发言再次，并说：

"不，我们没有。 我们从没见过的任何标记。"

好了，大家都在一种心理状态，现在，他们唱出：

"整个比林'的'm's欺诈! Le的鸭他们！ le的淹死他们！
le的旅他们在一个轨道!"每个人都是百日咳一次，并且有
是一个剑拔弩张的巫师. 但律师是他跳上桌并破口大骂，
并说：

"先生们—先生们！ 听我的只是一个字的—只是一个单
字—如果你请！ 有一个方法还没有—我们去挖
尸体，并期待。"

得了他们。

"万岁！"他们都呼喊，并开始关；但律师
和医生唱出：

"挺住，挺住！ 领的所有这四个男子和男孩，和获取
他们沿着呢！"

"我们就这样做！"他们都喊道；"和，如果我们不找到他们的标记
我们将林的整个团伙！"

我很害怕，现在我告诉你。 但是有警告，没有越来越远，你
知道。 他们抓住我们所有人，游行我们沿着正确的，直接的
墓地，这是一英里半下河，整个
的城镇在我们的脚后跟，因为我们做了足够的噪音，以及它是只有九个在
晚上。

正如我们过去了我们的房子我希望我没有发送玛丽珍出的
城镇，因为现在如果我能尖她的表情她就亮出来，并拯救
我，和打击在我们的死节拍。

好吧，我们一拥而上沿着河道路，就像
野猫队；以及使其更可怕的天空是darking，和
闪开始纵容和飞来飞去，并在风中颤抖之间
的叶子。 这是最可怕的麻烦和最dangersome我
是在和我是亲切惊呆了，一切都是那么的不同

我不得不允许的；而不是固定的，所以我可以带我自己的时间，如果我想，看看所有的乐趣，并有玛丽珍我回来救我，让我自由时，密切配合的到来，这里什么在世界的中间我突然死亡，但只是他们的纹身标志. 如果他们没有找到他们—

我实在忍不住去想它；但是，不知怎的，我不认为关于没有别的。 它得到了越来越黑，并且它是一个美丽的时间得到人群的滑；但是，大沙哑了我的手腕—海因斯—和一体可能试着给Goliar的滑。 他拖着我沿着正确的，他是如此的激动，我得跑到保持。

当他们到了那里，他们蜂拥进入墓地和用超过它像一个溢出。 当他们到了严重，他们发现它们有大约一百倍作为许多铲子，因为他们想要的，但没有没有想要取一个灯笼。 但他们驶入挖掘无论如何通过闪烁的闪电，并发送一个人到距离最近的房子，一半英里关闭，借用一个。

所以他们挖挖喜欢的一切；它得到了可怕的黑暗，而雨的开始，和风飕飕和swushed沿着，雷电来的活跃和活跃，并雷蓬勃发展；但他们的人从来没有通知它，它们是这项业务；以及一分钟你可以看到的一切，每一张脸这么大的人群，并将shovelfuls的污帆船的坟墓 而下一秒的黑暗中抹去这一切，你不能看到什么都没有。

最后他们离开了棺材，并开始拧盖，然后这另外一个拥挤和承担搡作，以scrouge在和得到的视线，你从没见；以及在黑暗中，这种方式，它是可怕的。 海因斯，他伤害了我的手腕可怕的拉扯所以，我觉得他干净忘了我是在世界上，他是那么的激动和气喘吁吁。

突然闪电让我们去一个完美的水闸的白色强光，并有人唱出：

"由生活的金革，这是一袋金子在他的乳房!"

海因斯让出呐喊，像其他人，并放弃了我的手腕给一个大浪涌猛击他的方式，并获得一看的方式，以及我亮出和shinned的道路在黑暗中有没有人能告诉。

我有的道路都对自己说，我相当飞了—至少我曾经拥有
自己除了固的黑暗，而现在-和-然后瞪和
嗡嗡声的雨水，而颠簸的风和分裂
雷；以及确保你出生我有没有剪辑它！

当我袭击了城里，我看到有警告不没有人在暴风雨，所以
我从没猎杀没有回大街，但双峰直接通过
主要的一个；并且当我开始得到实现我们的房子我瞄准我的眼睛
和设置。没有光没有；房屋所有黑暗—这让我感到难过
和失望的，我不知道为什么。但最后，正如我的帆船，
来闪光在玛丽*简的窗口！ 和我的心脏肿胀
起来的突然，就像胸围；以及同第二的房子和所有的是
在我身后在黑暗的，并不是永远要以前我没有更多的在
这个世界。她是最好的女孩我看到和拥有最沙。

我是远远不够的上述镇到看看，我可以做的
towhead，我开始看看尖锐的船借用，并在第一时间的
闪电般向我展示了一个这不是拴我抢走它和猛。它
是一个独木舟，并警告不固定什么也没有但是一根绳子。该towhead
是剑拔弩张的巨大距离，走在河中间，
但是我并没有失去任何时候；以及当我敲了竹筏去年我很
累我要一只规定了打击和奄奄一息，如果我能得到它。
但我没有。因为我现上我唱了：

"与你，Jim，她松了！ 荣耀是善良的我们
闭嘴！"

吉姆点燃了，是未来对我来说有这两种武器的传播，他是
如此的充满喜悦，但是当我看到他在闪电我的心脏开枪了
我的嘴我去过分的倒退，因为我忘了，他是老
李尔王和一个淹死了-rab所有在一个，它最害怕的肝脏
和灯光了我。但吉姆捕捞我出去，而是要拥抱我
并保佑我，等等，他很高兴我回来，我们被关闭的
国王和公爵，但我说：

"不，现在，有它的早餐，在早餐! 切松
让她滑动！"

所以在两秒钟内离开我们去了-滑下河，它
有没有看起来那么好，可免费再次和所有通过我们自己在大河流，
并且没有人打扰我们。我不得不跳了一下周围，跳起来

破解我的脚后跟几次—我不能帮助；但是关于第三裂我
注意到一个声音，我知道大好，并保持我的呼吸，并
听取了等待；以及足够肯定，在下一次闪光打掉了
，在这里他们来了！—只是个铺他们的桨并
使他们的小艇哼! 这是国王和公爵。

所以我枯萎的右下降到木板然后，放弃；
我所能做的来保持哭。

第三十章

当他们登上王去了我，并且动摇了我的
衣领，并说：

"试着给我们的滑，是你们，你小狗！ 厌倦了我们的公司，
嘿?"

我说：

"没有，陛下，我们警告不—请不要，陛下！"

"快，然后，告诉我们什么是你的主意，或者我会动摇的
内脏o'你！"

"诚实的，我会告诉你一切都只是因为它发生了，陛下。
男人了-霍尔特我是非常好的到我，不停的说他
有一个男孩约为大作为我去年去世，他遗憾地看到一个
男孩在这种危险的解决；以及当他们是花了大吃一惊的
现金，并作出一个仓促的棺材里，他让我
窃窃私语，'脚跟，现在，或者他们会吊死你们，肯定！'我亮出来。 它不
似乎没有很好的让我留下来—我不能做什么，我不想
挂如果我可以离开。 所以我从来没有停止运行，直到我找到了
独木舟；以及当我来到这里我告诉吉姆快点，或者他们会抓住我并
把我呢，我说是别怕你和公爵不是还活着，现在，
我被可怕的对不起，等等吉姆，而是可怕的很高兴的时候，我们看到
你来了，你可能会问，吉姆，如果我没有。"

吉姆说的它是如此；以及国王告诉他闭嘴，说："哦，
是的，这是大可能!"摇摇我再次说，他认为
他会drownd我。 但公爵说：

"Leggo的男孩，你这个老笨蛋！ 你会做任何不同吗?
你有没有查询周围对于他的时候你得到了松散的? 我不记得
它。"

所以国王让我走，并开始骂那个镇和大家
在它。 但公爵说：

"你最好的一个怪的视线给自己一个很好的骂人，
你是一个有权。 你的海恩不做的事情从
一开始就有任何意义，除了出来这么酷的和有厚脸皮的
假想蓝色的箭头标记。 这是亮—它是正确的下
欺负；以及它的东西救了我们。 因为如果没有，
他们会囚禁我们直到他们英国人的行李进来—然后—在
监狱，你的赌注！ 但这一招把他们的墓地，并将
黄金做了我们一个更大的善意；如果高兴傻瓜没有放
所有的-霍兹他并提出，急于得到一个看起来我们一个睡在我们的翻领到
晚上—翻领必要的磨损，太超过我们需要他们。"

他们仍然是一分钟思考；然后国王说，那种
心不在焉的样：

"Mf! 和我们忽视的黑人偷了它！"

这让我蠕动!

"是的，"公爵说，kinder缓慢和蓄意和讥讽，"我们
没有。"

之后约一个半一分钟国王drawls出：

"至少我做到了。"

公爵说的一样：

"相反，我没有。"

国王梓的褶皱，并说：

"听我说，毕奇华特，什么找你referrin？"

公爵说，很快:

"当谈到这一点，也许你会让我问什么你
参见?"

"胡说!"国王说，非常讽刺"，但我不知道—也许
你是睡着了，不知道是什么你是约"。

公爵毛了现在，说：

"哦，我们在此讨论的废话，你带我为一个怪的
傻瓜？ 你不想我知道谁躲在那钱在那棺材里？"

"是的，长官！ 我知道你知道，因为你做你自己！"
"这是一个谎言！"—和公爵去了他。 国王唱出：
"采取y'r手拿开!—leggo我的喉咙！—我把它回来了！"
公爵说：
"好吧，你只是自己起来，首先，那你有没有藏钱在那里，

打算给我滑的一个这些天来，回来把它挖出来
，并有这一切对你自己。"

"等待开玩笑一分钟，公爵—回答我这个问题，诚实和
公平；如果你不把钱放那里,说吧，我只b'lieve你，
拿回我说的一切。"

"你这个老坏蛋，我没有，你知道我没有。 那，现在！"
"好吧，那么，我的b'lieve你。 但是，回答我只是开玩笑这一—

现在不git疯了，你没有它在你的心挂钩的金钱
和隐藏它？"

杜克从未说什么一点点；然后他说：
"好吧，我不在乎如果我没有，我没有这样做，无论如何。 但是你不仅仅

有它的记这样做，但你做到了。"
"我希望我永远不会死亡，如果我这样做，公爵，这就是诚实的。 我不会说我
警告不要这样做，因为我是，但你—我的意思是有人—我
在前面o'我。"

"它是一个谎言！ 你做到了，你得说你做到了，或"
国王开始汩汩，然后他喘气出：
"'了!—我自己起来！"
我很高兴听到他说的；它使我感到更多的

比我当时的感觉。 所以公爵把他的手离开，并
说：

"如果你曾经拒绝再来一次我就会淹死你。 它是好的你
有和鲸脂就像一个宝宝—这是fitten你，之后的样子，你已经
采取了行动。 我从来没有看到这样一个古老的鸵鸟想要吞噬一切，
和我一-信任你所有的时间，像你是我自己的父亲。 你应该
来一直为自己感到羞耻支持，并听到它背负上很多
贫穷的黑鬼，你从来不说一个词对他们。 这让我感到
可笑的认为我足够柔软以认为，rubbage. 骂
你，我现在可以看到为什么你这么急着来弥补deffisit—你

想得到什么钱我出异兽一件事或
另一，铲这一切！"

国王说，胆小，并且仍然是一个-散:
"为什么，杜克，这是你说的deffisit；它警告不我。"
"干起来! 我不想听到没有更多了你！"公爵说.

"现在你看看你得到了什么。 他们已经得到了所有他们自己的
钱回来，所有的OURN但谢克尔或两个之外。 G'long到
床，你不deffersit我没有更多的deffersits，长's你的生活！"

所以国王潜入棚屋，把他的瓶
的舒适度，并且不久将公爵解决他的瓶子；因此，在大约一个
半小时，他们是作为厚作为盗贼的一次，并加强他们
的lovinger他们到了，去一个-打鼾在彼此的怀抱。 他们
都得到了强大的醇厚，但我注意到国王没有获得圆润的
足够忘记得不拒绝关于隐藏的钱包
了。 这让我感到轻松和满意。 当然当他们得到了
打鼾的我们有一个长期的数落我告诉吉姆的一切。

第三十一章

我们达森不再在任何城镇，天天；保持沿着正确的
顺流而下。 我们是去南方在温暖的天气现在和一个
强大的长期的方式从家庭。 我们开始以来的树木与西班牙的
莫斯，垂下从四肢像长的灰色的胡须。 这
是第一次我看到它增长，它提出了树林里看庄严的
和令人沮丧的。 因此，现在的欺诈估计他们是出来的危险，他们
开始工作的村庄。

第一，他们所做的演讲，讲题是节制；但是他们没有作出足够
他们两个喝醉。 然后在另一个村庄，他们开始了一个
舞蹈学校；但他们不知道没有更多的舞蹈比
袋鼠不会；这样的第一腾跃，他们由一般公众跃
在又蹦又跳出他们的城镇。 另一次，他们试图去在
yellocution；但是他们没有yellocute长，直到观众站了起来，并且
给他们一个固良好的骂人，使他们跳出来。 他们解决
missionarying和迷人的，并且篡改，并告诉命运，并且
一点的一切，但他们不能似乎没有运气。 所以在最后

他们得到的只是关于死的爆发，奠定了周围的木筏为她漂浮着，思想和思考，并且从未说什么，由半天的时间，并且可怕的蓝色和绝望。

最后他们带走了改变，并开始奠定他们的头在一起的棚屋和谈低和保密的两个或三个小时的时间。吉姆和我得到了不安。我们不喜欢它。我们判断他们是在学习一些更糟糕的deviltry比以往任何时候。我们把它翻过来和结束，并在最后我们做了我们的思想，他们是闯入别人的房屋或商店，或者是进入假的钱业务，或者东西。这样的话，我们是相当害怕的，并提出了一个协定，我们就不会有世界上没有什么要做这样的行动，并且如果我们得到了最显示出我们会给他们的冷摇和清除出去，让他们在后面。好吧，一天早晨，我们躲在竹筏在一个良好的、安全的地方大约两英里以下一点的一个简陋的村名叫派克斯维尔，和国王他上了岸上，并告诉我们全部留藏，而他去到镇和冶炼看如果任何人有任何风的皇家异兽那里。("房子抢劫，你的意思是说，"我对自己说，"当你到过抢劫它你会回来这里，不知道已经成为我和吉姆和木筏—你就必须把它取出来，在不知道。") 他说，如果他警告不回通过中午的公爵和我会知道这一切都是正确的，和我们一起走。

所以我们住在哪里，我们是。公爵他担忧，大汗淋漓的周围，在一个强大的酸酸的方式。他骂我们的一切，我们不能似乎不正确的；他发现了错误，每一个小小的事情。什么是a-酝酿之中，肯定的。我好高兴的时候正午来和没有国王，我们可以有改变，无论如何—也许有机会对有机会在它的上面。所以我和duke去的村庄和狩猎周围有为国王，并通过由我们发现他在后面房间有点低doggery，非常紧，并且很多懒汉bullyragging他的运动，和他一咒骂和威胁与他所有可能的，那么紧，他不能走路，和不能做什么给他们。公爵他开始滥用他的一个老傻瓜，和国王开始萨斯回来的，他们是在相当它我点燃了和摇了这些珊瑚礁出我的后腿，和纺下的河道路就像一只鹿

我看到我们的机会；以及我提出了我的心，这将是一个漫长的一天
之前他们可以看见我和吉姆一次。 我得到了没有呼吸
但是，装载了喜悦，并唱出：

"她松散，吉姆！ 我们的所有权利，现在！"

但是有警告没有回答，没人出来的窝棚。

吉姆已经走了! 我设置了一个喊—然后另一个—然后另一个；
并运行这条路在树林里，百日咳和尖锐刺耳的声音；但是它
警告说没有用—老吉姆已经走了。 然后我下来，并喊道，我不能
帮助它。 但我不能设置仍然漫长。 很快我出去的道路上，
想想我做的更好，我遇到一个男孩走，并
问他是否想见到一个陌生的黑人穿着如此，所以，他说：

"是的。"

"行踪？说："I

"下降到塞拉斯菲尔普斯的地方，两英里下面的这里。 他是个失控的
黑鬼，他们已经得到了他。 是你寻找他吗？"

"你打赌我不是! 我碰到他在树林里一两个小时
前，和他说如果我喊他想砍我的肝脏了—告诉我要躺
下来，住在哪里，我，我做了。 已经有过以来，别怕
出来。"

"好的"他说，"你不需要别怕没有更多，因为人们已经得到了
他。 他跑f敢南，som'ers."

"这是一个良好的工作，他们得到了他。"

"嗯，我觉得! 有两个数百美元的奖励。 它的
像捡钱恩的道路。"

"是的，它就是—我可以有它，如果我已经足够大；我看到他
第一次。 谁钉他吗？"

"它是一个老家伙—一个陌生人—和他出卖了他的机会在他
四十元美元，，他得走了河和不能等待。 认为
o'那，现在！ 你打赌我会等，如果这是七年。"

"这就是我每次说，"I"但也许他的机会是不值得
没有比这更多，如果他会把它卖掉这么便宜。 也许有什么东西是不是
直接有关。"

"但是，虽然直作为一串。 我看到的传单我自己。 它
告诉所有关于他，一点油漆他喜欢的图片，讲述了
种植园，他frum，下面NewrLEANS. 没有-绝对-鲍勃，他们是不是没有

麻烦'回合这一猜测，你打赌你的。 我说，给我一个嚼
tobacker，不，你们?"

我没有无，所以他离开了。 我去木筏，并设置在
帐篷想。 但我不能什么都没有。 我想我穿
我的头痛，但我不能看不到出路的麻烦。 之后所有这
漫长旅程，在所有以后我们会为他们做坏蛋，这里是所有
来没什么，一切所有捣毁和破坏，因为他们可以
安心为吉姆这样的把戏，让他一个奴隶
再次他所有的生活，和陌生人之间，也用于第四十脏美元。

一旦我对自己说这将是一千次好Jim
是个奴隶在家里，他的家人，只要他们得到被一个
奴隶，所以我最好写了一封信，汤姆*索亚，并告诉他告诉
小姐沃森他在哪里。 但我很快就放弃这一概念两
件事：她会很生气，厌恶在他rascality和ungratefulness对于
离开了她，并使她卖给他直顺流而下再次；以及如果
她没有，大家自然藐视一个忘恩负义的黑鬼，他们会
让吉姆觉得这一切的时间，并使他会觉得故意刁难和灰头土脸。 及
然后想到我！ 它将得到所有周围，哈克帮了一个黑鬼
让他的自由；以及如果我曾看见有人从那座城市再一次
我会准备好下来舔他的靴子为耻辱。 就是这
样的：一个人做一个低下的事情，然后他不想采取任何
后果。 认为只要他可以隐藏的，它不是耻辱。
这是我的修正。 我研究了关于这个更为我的
良心去了磨我，和更多的邪恶和低下和
坏脾气我有的感觉。 最后，当它打我突然，
在这里是纯手工的普罗维登斯打我的脸，让
我知道我的邪恶是被监视了所有的时间从那里在
天堂,而我是偷了一个可怜的老女人是黑人，没有
做我没有伤害，现在是显示我有一个总是在
寻找， 并不是要允许在没有这种悲惨的所作所为去
仅只是皮毛而没有进一步，我最下降在我的轨迹我是如此的
害怕。 嗯，我试过最好的，我可以以亲切软化它不知何故对
自己说我是带了邪恶，因此我提出警告不这么多的
怪；但是，里面的东西我一直在说，"有主日
学校里，你可以一走了，如果你想一个做了他们一个教训你

有人作为我的行关于黑人进入
永恒的火灾。"

It made me shiver. And I about made up my mind to pray, and see if I couldn't try to quit being the kind of a boy I was and be better. So I kneeled down. But the words wouldn't come. Why wouldn't they? It warn't no use to try and hide it from Him. Nor from ME, neither. I knowed very well why they wouldn't come. It was because my heart warn't right; it was because I warn't square; it was because I was playing double. I was letting ON to give up sin, but away inside of me I was holding on to the biggest one of all. I was trying to make my mouth SAY I would do the right thing and the clean thing, and go and write to that nigger's owner and tell where he was; but deep down in me I knowed it was a lie, and He knowed it. You can't pray a lie—I found that out.

So I was full of trouble, full as I could be; and didn't know what to do. At last I had an idea; and I says, I'll go and write the letter—and then see if I can pray. Why, it was astonishing, the way I felt as light as a feather right straight off, and my troubles all gone. So I got a piece of paper and a pencil, all glad and excited, and set down and wrote:

Miss Watson, your runaway nigger Jim is down here two mile below Pikesville, and Mr. Phelps has got him and he will give him up for the reward if you send.

HUCK FINN.

I felt good and all washed clean of sin for the first time I had ever felt so in my life, and I knowed I could pray now. But I didn't do it straight off, but laid the paper down and set there thinking—thinking how good it was all this happened so, and how near I come to being lost and going to hell. And went on thinking. And got to thinking over our trip down the river; and I see Jim before me all the time: in the day and in the night-time, sometimes moonlight, sometimes storms, and we a-floating along, talking and singing and laughing. But somehow I couldn't seem to strike no places to harden me against him, but only the other kind. I'd see him standing my watch on top of his'n, 'stead of calling me,

so I could go on sleeping; and see him how glad he was when I come back out of the fog; and when I come to him again in the swamp, up there where the feud was; and such-like times; and would always call me honey, and pet me and do everything he could think of for me, and how good he always was; and at last I struck the time I saved him by telling the men we had small-pox aboard, and he was so grateful, and said I was the best friend old Jim ever had in the world, and the ONLY one he's got now; and then I happened to look around and see that paper.

It was a close place. I took it up, and held it in my hand. I was a-trembling, because I'd got to decide, forever, betwixt two things, and I knowed it. I studied a minute, sort of holding my breath, and then says to myself:

"All right, then, I'll GO to hell"—and tore it up.

It was awful thoughts and awful words, but they was said. And I let them stay said; and never thought no more about reforming. I shoved the whole thing out of my head, and said I would take up wickedness again, which was in my line, being brung up to it, and the other warn't. And for a starter I would go to work and steal Jim out of slavery again; and if I could think up anything worse, I would do that, too; because as long as I was in, and in for good, I might as well go the whole hog.

Then I set to thinking over how to get at it, and turned over some considerable many ways in my mind; and at last fixed up a plan that suited me. So then I took the bearings of a woody island that was down the river a piece, and as soon as it was fairly dark I crept out with my raft and went for it, and hid it there, and then turned in. I slept the night through, and got up before it was light, and had my breakfast, and put on my store clothes, and tied up some others and one thing or another in a bundle, and took the canoe and cleared for shore. I landed below where I judged was Phelps's place, and hid my bundle in the woods, and then filled up the canoe with water, and loaded rocks into her and sunk her where I could find her again when I wanted her, about a quarter of a mile below a little steam sawmill that was on the bank.

Then I struck up the road, and when I passed the mill I see a sign on it, "Phelps's Sawmill," and when I come to the farm-houses, two or three hundred yards further along, I kept my eyes peeled, but didn't see

nobody around, though it was good daylight now. But I didn't mind, because I didn't want to see nobody just yet—I only wanted to get the lay of the land. According to my plan, I was going to turn up there from the village, not from below. So I just took a look, and shoved along, straight for town. Well, the very first man I see when I got there was the duke. He was sticking up a bill for the Royal Nonesuch—three-night performance—like that other time. They had the cheek, them frauds! I was right on him before I could shirk. He looked astonished, and says:

"Hel-LO! Where'd YOU come from?" Then he says, kind of glad and eager, "Where's the raft?—got her in a good place?"

I says:

"Why, that's just what I was going to ask your grace."

Then he didn't look so joyful, and says:

"What was your idea for asking ME?" he says.

"Well," I says, "when I see the king in that doggery yesterday I says to myself, we can't get him home for hours, till he's soberer; so I went a-loafing around town to put in the time and wait. A man up and offered me ten cents to help him pull a skiff over the river and back to fetch a sheep, and so I went along; but when we was dragging him to the boat, and the man left me a-holt of the rope and went behind him to shove him along, he was too strong for me and jerked loose and run, and we after him. We didn't have no dog, and so we had to chase him all over the country till we tired him out. We never got him till dark; then we fetched him over, and I started down for the raft. When I got there and see it was gone, I says to myself, 'They've got into trouble and had to leave; and they've took my nigger, which is the only nigger I've got in the world, and now I'm in a strange country, and ain't got no property no more, nor nothing, and no way to make my living;' so I set down and cried. I slept in the woods all night. But what DID become of the raft, then?—and Jim—poor Jim!"

"Blamed if I know—that is, what's become of the raft. That old fool had made a trade and got forty dollars, and when we found him in the doggery the loafers had matched half-dollars with him and got every cent but what he'd spent for whisky; and when I got him home late last night

and found the raft gone, we said, ‘That little rascal has stole our raft and shook us, and run off down the river.’“

“I wouldn’t shake my NIGGER, would I?—the only nigger I had in the world, and the only property.”

“We never thought of that. Fact is, I reckon we’d come to consider him OUR nigger; yes, we did consider him so—goodness knows we had trouble enough for him. So when we see the raft was gone and we flat broke, there warn’t anything for it but to try the Royal Nonesuch another shake. And I’ve pegged along ever since, dry as a powder-horn. Where’s that ten cents? Give it here.”

I had considerable money, so I give him ten cents, but begged him to spend it for something to eat, and give me some, because it was all the money I had, and I hadn’t had nothing to eat since yesterday. He never said nothing. The next minute he whirls on me and says:

“Do you reckon that nigger would blow on us? We’d skin him if he done that!”

“How can he blow? Hain’t he run off?”

“No! That old fool sold him, and never divided with me, and the money’s gone.”

“SOLD him?” I says, and begun to cry; “why, he was MY nigger, and that was my money. Where is he?—I want my nigger.”

“Well, you can’t GET your nigger, that’s all—so dry up your blubbering. Looky here—do you think YOU’D venture to blow on us? Blamed if I think I’d trust you. Why, if you WAS to blow on us—”

He stopped, but I never see the duke look so ugly out of his eyes before. I went on a-whimpering, and says:

“I don’t want to blow on nobody; and I ain’t got no time to blow, nohow. I got to turn out and find my nigger.”

He looked kinder bothered, and stood there with his bills fluttering on his arm, thinking, and wrinkling up his forehead. At last he says:

“I’ll tell you something. We got to be here three days. If you’ll promise you won’t blow, and won’t let the nigger blow, I’ll tell you where to find him.”

So I promised, and he says:

“A farmer by the name of Silas Ph—” and then he stopped. You see, he started to tell me the truth; but when he stopped that way, and begun to study and think again, I reckoned he was changing his mind. And so he was. He wouldn’t trust me; he wanted to make sure of having me out of the way the whole three days. So pretty soon he says:

“The man that bought him is named Abram Foster—Abram G. Foster—and he lives forty mile back here in the country, on the road to Lafayette.”

“All right,” I says, “I can walk it in three days. And I’ll start this very afternoon.”

“No you wont, you’ll start NOW; and don’t you lose any time about it, neither, nor do any gabbling by the way. Just keep a tight tongue in your head and move right along, and then you won’t get into trouble with US, d’ye hear?”

That was the order I wanted, and that was the one I played for. I wanted to be left free to work my plans.

“So clear out,” he says; “and you can tell Mr. Foster whatever you want to. Maybe you can get him to believe that Jim IS your nigger—some idiots don’t require documents—leastways I’ve heard there’s such down South here. And when you tell him the handbill and the reward’s bogus, maybe he’ll believe you when you explain to him what the idea was for getting ‘em out. Go ‘long now, and tell him anything you want to; but mind you don’t work your jaw any BETWEEN here and there.”

So I left, and struck for the back country. I didn’t look around, but I kinder felt like he was watching me. But I knowed I could tire him out at that. I went straight out in the country as much as a mile before I stopped; then I doubled back through the woods towards Phelps’. I reckoned I better start in on my plan straight off without fooling around, because I wanted to stop Jim’s mouth till these fellows could get away. I didn’t want no trouble with their kind. I’d seen all I wanted to of them, and wanted to get entirely shut of them.

Chapter XXXII

WHEN I got there it was all still and Sunday-like, and hot and sunshiny; the hands was gone to the fields; and there was them kind of faint dronings of bugs and flies in the air that makes it seem so lonesome and like everybody's dead and gone; and if a breeze fans along and quivers the leaves it makes you feel mournful, because you feel like it's spirits whispering—spirits that's been dead ever so many years—and you always think they're talking about YOU. As a general thing it makes a body wish HE was dead, too, and done with it all.

Phelps' was one of these little one-horse cotton plantations, and they all look alike. A rail fence round a two-acre yard; a stile made out of logs sawed off and up-ended in steps, like barrels of a different length, to climb over the fence with, and for the women to stand on when they are going to jump on to a horse; some sickly grass-patches in the big yard, but mostly it was bare and smooth, like an old hat with the nap rubbed off; big double log-house for the white folks—hewed logs, with the chinks stopped up with mud or mortar, and these mud-stripes been whitewashed some time or another; round-log kitchen, with a big broad, open but roofed passage joining it to the house; log smoke-house back of the kitchen; three little log nigger-cabins in a row t'other side the smoke-house; one little hut all by itself away down against the back fence, and some outbuildings down a piece the other side; ash-hopper and big kettle to bile soap in by the little hut; bench by the kitchen door, with bucket of water and a gourd; hound asleep there in the sun; more hounds asleep round about; about three shade trees away off in a corner; some currant bushes and gooseberry bushes in one place by the fence; outside of the fence a garden and a watermelon patch; then the cotton fields begins, and after the fields the woods.

I went around and clumb over the back stile by the ash-hopper, and started for the kitchen. When I got a little ways I heard the dim hum of a spinning-wheel wailing along up and sinking along down again; and then I knowed for certain I wished I was dead—for that IS the lonesomest sound in the whole world.

I went right along, not fixing up any particular plan, but just trusting to Providence to put the right words in my mouth when the time come; for I'd noticed that Providence always did put the right words in my mouth if I left it alone.

When I got half-way, first one hound and then another got up and went for me, and of course I stopped and faced them, and kept still. And such another powwow as they made! In a quarter of a minute I was a kind of a hub of a wheel, as you may say—spokes made out of dogs—circle of fifteen of them packed together around me, with their necks and noses stretched up towards me, a-barking and howling; and more a-coming; you could see them sailing over fences and around corners from everywheres.

A nigger woman come tearing out of the kitchen with a rolling-pin in her hand, singing out, "Begone YOU Tige! you Spot! begone sah!" and she fetched first one and then another of them a clip and sent them howling, and then the rest followed; and the next second half of them come back, wagging their tails around me, and making friends with me. There ain't no harm in a hound, nohow.

And behind the woman comes a little nigger girl and two little nigger boys without anything on but tow-linen shirts, and they hung on to their mother's gown, and peeped out from behind her at me, bashful, the way they always do. And here comes the white woman running from the house, about forty-five or fifty year old, bareheaded, and her spinning-stick in her hand; and behind her comes her little white children, acting the same way the little niggers was going. She was smiling all over so she could hardly stand—and says:

"It's YOU, at last!—AIN'T it?"

I out with a "Yes'm" before I thought.

She grabbed me and hugged me tight; and then gripped me by both hands and shook and shook; and the tears come in her eyes, and run down over; and she couldn't seem to hug and shake enough, and kept saying, "You don't look as much like your mother as I reckoned you would; but law sakes, I don't care for that, I'm so glad to see you! Dear, dear, it does seem like I could eat you up! Children, it's your cousin Tom!—tell him howdy."

But they ducked their heads, and put their fingers in their mouths, and hid behind her. So she run on:

“Lize, hurry up and get him a hot breakfast right away—or did you get your breakfast on the boat?”

I said I had got it on the boat. So then she started for the house, leading me by the hand, and the children tagging after. When we got there she set me down in a split-bottomed chair, and set herself down on a little low stool in front of me, holding both of my hands, and says:

“Now I can have a GOOD look at you; and, laws-a-me, I’ve been hungry for it a many and a many a time, all these long years, and it’s come at last! We been expecting you a couple of days and more. What kep’ you?—boat get aground?”

“Yes’m—she—”

“Don’t say yes’m—say Aunt Sally. Where’d she get aground?”

I didn’t rightly know what to say, because I didn’t know whether the boat would be coming up the river or down. But I go a good deal on instinct; and my instinct said she would be coming up—from down towards Orleans. That didn’t help me much, though; for I didn’t know the names of bars down that way. I see I’d got to invent a bar, or forget the name of the one we got aground on—or—Now I struck an idea, and fetched it out:

“It warn’t the grounding—that didn’t keep us back but a little. We blowed out a cylinder-head.”

“Good gracious! anybody hurt?”

“No’m. Killed a nigger.”

“Well, it’s lucky; because sometimes people do get hurt. Two years ago last Christmas your uncle Silas was coming up from Newrleans on the old Lally Rook, and she blowed out a cylinder-head and crippled a man. And I think he died afterwards. He was a Baptist. Your uncle Silas knowed a family in Baton Rouge that knowed his people very well. Yes, I remember now, he DID die. Mortification set in, and they had to amputate him. But it didn’t save him. Yes, it was mortification—that was it. He turned blue all over, and died in the hope of a glorious resurrection. They say he was a sight to look at. Your uncle’s been up to the town every day to fetch you. And he’s gone again, not more’n an

hour ago; he'll be back any minute now. You must a met him on the road, didn't you?—oldish man, with a—"

"No, I didn't see nobody, Aunt Sally. The boat landed just at daylight, and I left my baggage on the wharf-boat and went looking around the town and out a piece in the country, to put in the time and not get here too soon; and so I come down the back way."

"Who'd you give the baggage to?"

"Nobody."

"Why, child, it 'll be stole!"

"Not where I hid it I reckon it won't," I says.

"How'd you get your breakfast so early on the boat?"

It was kinder thin ice, but I says:

"The captain see me standing around, and told me I better have something to eat before I went ashore; so he took me in the texas to the officers' lunch, and give me all I wanted."

I was getting so uneasy I couldn't listen good. I had my mind on the children all the time; I wanted to get them out to one side and pump them a little, and find out who I was. But I couldn't get no show, Mrs. Phelps kept it up and run on so. Pretty soon she made the cold chills streak all down my back, because she says:

"But here we're a-running on this way, and you hain't told me a word about Sis, nor any of them. Now I'll rest my works a little, and you start up yourn; just tell me EVERYTHING—tell me all about 'm all every one of 'm; and how they are, and what they're doing, and what they told you to tell me; and every last thing you can think of."

Well, I see I was up a stump—and up it good. Providence had stood by me this fur all right, but I was hard and tight aground now. I see it warn't a bit of use to try to go ahead—I'd got to throw up my hand. So I says to myself, here's another place where I got to resk the truth. I opened my mouth to begin; but she grabbed me and hustled me in behind the bed, and says:

"Here he comes! Stick your head down lower—there, that'll do; you can't be seen now. Don't you let on you're here. I'll play a joke on him. Children, don't you say a word."

I see I was in a fix now. But it warn't no use to worry; there warn't nothing to do but just hold still, and try and be ready to stand from under when the lightning struck.

I had just one little glimpse of the old gentleman when he come in; then the bed hid him. Mrs. Phelps she jumps for him, and says:

"Has he come?"

"No," says her husband.

"Good-NESS gracious!" she says, "what in the warld can have become of him?"

"I can't imagine," says the old gentleman; "and I must say it makes me dreadful uneasy."

"Uneasy!" she says; "I'm ready to go distracted! He MUST a come; and you've missed him along the road. I KNOW it's so—something tells me so."

"Why, Sally, I COULDN'T miss him along the road—YOU know that."

"But oh, dear, dear, what WILL Sis say! He must a come! You must a missed him. He—"

"Oh, don't distress me any more'n I'm already distressed. I don't know what in the world to make of it. I'm at my wit's end, and I don't mind acknowledging 't I'm right down scared. But there's no hope that he's come; for he COULDN'T come and me miss him. Sally, it's terrible—just terrible—something's happened to the boat, sure!"

"Why, Silas! Look yonder!—up the road!—ain't that somebody coming?"

He sprung to the window at the head of the bed, and that give Mrs. Phelps the chance she wanted. She stooped down quick at the foot of the bed and give me a pull, and out I come; and when he turned back from the window there she stood, a-beaming and a-smiling like a house afire, and I standing pretty meek and sweaty alongside. The old gentleman stared, and says:

"Why, who's that?"

"Who do you reckon 't is?"

"I hain't no idea. Who IS it?"

"It's TOM SAWYER!"

By jings, I most slumped through the floor! But there warn't no time to swap knives; the old man grabbed me by the hand and shook, and kept on shaking; and all the time how the woman did dance around and laugh and cry; and then how they both did fire off questions about Sid, and Mary, and the rest of the tribe.

But if they was joyful, it warn't nothing to what I was; for it was like being born again, I was so glad to find out who I was. Well, they froze to me for two hours; and at last, when my chin was so tired it couldn't hardly go any more, I had told them more about my family—I mean the Sawyer family—than ever happened to any six Sawyer families. And I explained all about how we blowed out a cylinder-head at the mouth of White River, and it took us three days to fix it. Which was all right, and worked first-rate; because THEY didn't know but what it would take three days to fix it. If I'd a called it a bolthead it would a done just as well.

Now I was feeling pretty comfortable all down one side, and pretty uncomfortable all up the other. Being Tom Sawyer was easy and comfortable, and it stayed easy and comfortable till by and by I hear a steamboat coughing along down the river. Then I says to myself, s'pose Tom Sawyer comes down on that boat? And s'pose he steps in here any minute, and sings out my name before I can throw him a wink to keep quiet?

Well, I couldn't HAVE it that way; it wouldn't do at all. I must go up the road and waylay him. So I told the folks I reckoned I would go up to the town and fetch down my baggage. The old gentleman was for going along with me, but I said no, I could drive the horse myself, and I druther he wouldn't take no trouble about me.

Chapter XXXIII

SO I started for town in the wagon, and when I was half-way I see a wagon coming, and sure enough it was Tom Sawyer, and I stopped and waited till he come along. I says "Hold on!" and it stopped alongside, and his mouth opened up like a trunk, and stayed so; and he swallowed two or three times like a person that's got a dry throat, and then says:

"I hain't ever done you no harm. You know that. So, then, what you want to come back and ha'nt ME for?"

I says:

"I hain't come back—I hain't been GONE."

When he heard my voice it righted him up some, but he warn't quite satisfied yet. He says:

"Don't you play nothing on me, because I wouldn't on you. Honest injun, you ain't a ghost?"

"Honest injun, I ain't," I says.

"Well—I—I—well, that ought to settle it, of course; but I can't somehow seem to understand it no way. Looky here, warn't you ever murdered AT ALL?"

"No. I warn't ever murdered at all—I played it on them. You come in here and feel of me if you don't believe me."

So he done it; and it satisfied him; and he was that glad to see me again he didn't know what to do. And he wanted to know all about it right off, because it was a grand adventure, and mysterious, and so it hit him where he lived. But I said, leave it alone till by and by; and told his driver to wait, and we drove off a little piece, and I told him the kind of a fix I was in, and what did he reckon we better do? He said, let him alone a minute, and don't disturb him. So he thought and thought, and pretty soon he says:

"It's all right; I've got it. Take my trunk in your wagon, and let on it's your'n; and you turn back and fool along slow, so as to get to the house about the time you ought to; and I'll go towards town a piece, and take a fresh start, and get there a quarter or a half an hour after you; and you needn't let on to know me at first."

I says:

"All right; but wait a minute. There's one more thing—a thing that NOBODY don't know but me. And that is, there's a nigger here that I'm a-trying to steal out of slavery, and his name is JIM—old Miss Watson's Jim."

He says:

"What! Why, Jim is—"

He stopped and went to studying. I says:

"I know what you'll say. You'll say it's dirty, low-down business; but what if it is? I'm low down; and I'm a-going to steal him, and I want you keep mum and not let on. Will you?"

His eye lit up, and he says:

"I'll HELP you steal him!"

Well, I let go all holts then, like I was shot. It was the most astonishing speech I ever heard—and I'm bound to say Tom Sawyer fell considerable in my estimation. Only I couldn't believe it. Tom Sawyer a NIGGER-STEALER!

"Oh, shucks!" I says; "you're joking."

"I ain't joking, either."

"Well, then," I says, "joking or no joking, if you hear anything said about a runaway nigger, don't forget to remember that YOU don't know nothing about him, and I don't know nothing about him."

Then we took the trunk and put it in my wagon, and he drove off his way and I drove mine. But of course I forgot all about driving slow on accounts of being glad and full of thinking; so I got home a heap too quick for that length of a trip. The old gentleman was at the door, and he says:

"Why, this is wonderful! Whoever would a thought it was in that mare to do it? I wish we'd a timed her. And she hain't sweated a hair—not a hair. It's wonderful. Why, I wouldn't take a hundred dollars for that horse now—I wouldn't, honest; and yet I'd a sold her for fifteen before, and thought 'twas all she was worth."

That's all he said. He was the innocentest, best old soul I ever see. But it warn't surprising; because he warn't only just a farmer, he was a preacher, too, and had a little one-horse log church down back of the plantation, which he built it himself at his own expense, for a church and schoolhouse, and never charged nothing for his preaching, and it was worth it, too. There was plenty other farmer-preachers like that, and done the same way, down South.

In about half an hour Tom's wagon drove up to the front stile, and Aunt Sally she see it through the window, because it was only about fifty yards, and says:

“Why, there’s somebody come! I wonder who ‘tis? Why, I do believe it’s a stranger. Jimmy” (that’s one of the children) “run and tell Lize to put on another plate for dinner.”

Everybody made a rush for the front door, because, of course, a stranger don’t come EVERY year, and so he lays over the yaller-fever, for interest, when he does come. Tom was over the stile and starting for the house; the wagon was spinning up the road for the village, and we was all bunched in the front door. Tom had his store clothes on, and an audience—and that was always nuts for Tom Sawyer. In them circumstances it warn’t no trouble to him to throw in an amount of style that was suitable. He warn’t a boy to meeky along up that yard like a sheep; no, he come ca’m and important, like the ram. When he got a-front of us he lifts his hat ever so gracious and dainty, like it was the lid of a box that had butterflies asleep in it and he didn’t want to disturb them, and says:

“Mr. Archibald Nichols, I presume?”

“No, my boy,” says the old gentleman, “I’m sorry to say ‘t your driver has deceived you; Nichols’s place is down a matter of three mile more. Come in, come in.”

Tom he took a look back over his shoulder, and says, “Too late—he’s out of sight.”

“Yes, he’s gone, my son, and you must come in and eat your dinner with us; and then we’ll hitch up and take you down to Nichols’s.”

“Oh, I CAN’T make you so much trouble; I couldn’t think of it. I’ll walk —I don’t mind the distance.”

“But we won’t LET you walk—it wouldn’t be Southern hospitality to do it. Come right in.”

“Oh, DO,” says Aunt Sally; “it ain’t a bit of trouble to us, not a bit in the world. You must stay. It’s a long, dusty three mile, and we can’t let you walk. And, besides, I’ve already told ‘em to put on another plate when I see you coming; so you mustn’t disappoint us. Come right in and make yourself at home.”

So Tom he thanked them very hearty and handsome, and let himself be persuaded, and come in; and when he was in he said he was a stranger

from Hicksville, Ohio, and his name was William Thompson—and he made another bow.

Well, he run on, and on, and on, making up stuff about Hicksville and everybody in it he could invent, and I getting a little nervious, and wondering how this was going to help me out of my scrape; and at last, still talking along, he reached over and kissed Aunt Sally right on the mouth, and then settled back again in his chair comfortable, and was going on talking; but she jumped up and wiped it off with the back of her hand, and says:

"You owdacious puppy!"

He looked kind of hurt, and says:

"I'm surprised at you, m'am."

"You're s'rp—Why, what do you reckon I am? I've a good notion to take and—Say, what do you mean by kissing me?"

He looked kind of humble, and says:

"I didn't mean nothing, m'am. I didn't mean no harm. I—I—thought you'd like it."

"Why, you born fool!" She took up the spinning stick, and it looked like it was all she could do to keep from giving him a crack with it. "What made you think I'd like it?"

"Well, I don't know. Only, they—they—told me you would."

"THEY told you I would. Whoever told you's ANOTHER lunatic. I never heard the beat of it. Who's THEY?"

"Why, everybody. They all said so, m'am."

It was all she could do to hold in; and her eyes snapped, and her fingers worked like she wanted to scratch him; and she says:

"Who's 'everybody'? Out with their names, or ther'll be an idiot short."

He got up and looked distressed, and fumbled his hat, and says:

"I'm sorry, and I warn't expecting it. They told me to. They all told me to. They all said, kiss her; and said she'd like it. They all said it—every one of them. But I'm sorry, m'am, and I won't do it no more —I won't, honest."

"You won't, won't you? Well, I sh'd RECKON you won't!"

“No’m, I’m honest about it; I won’t ever do it again—till you ask me.”

“Till I ASK you! Well, I never see the beat of it in my born days! I lay you’ll be the Methusalem-numskull of creation before ever I ask you—or the likes of you.”

“Well,” he says, “it does surprise me so. I can’t make it out, somehow. They said you would, and I thought you would. But—” He stopped and looked around slow, like he wished he could run across a friendly eye somewheres, and fetched up on the old gentleman’s, and says, “Didn’t YOU think she’d like me to kiss her, sir?”

“Why, no; I—I—well, no, I b’lieve I didn’t.”

Then he looks on around the same way to me, and says:

“Tom, didn’t YOU think Aunt Sally ‘d open out her arms and say, ‘Sid Sawyer—’“

“My land!” she says, breaking in and jumping for him, “you impudent young rascal, to fool a body so—” and was going to hug him, but he fended her off, and says:

“No, not till you’ve asked me first.”

So she didn’t lose no time, but asked him; and hugged him and kissed him over and over again, and then turned him over to the old man, and he took what was left. And after they got a little quiet again she says:

“Why, dear me, I never see such a surprise. We warn’t looking for YOU at all, but only Tom. Sis never wrote to me about anybody coming but him.”

“It’s because it warn’t INTENDED for any of us to come but Tom,” he says; “but I begged and begged, and at the last minute she let me come, too; so, coming down the river, me and Tom thought it would be a first-rate surprise for him to come here to the house first, and for me to by and by tag along and drop in, and let on to be a stranger. But it was a mistake, Aunt Sally. This ain’t no healthy place for a stranger to come.”

“No—not impudent whelps, Sid. You ought to had your jaws boxed; I hain’t been so put out since I don’t know when. But I don’t care, I don’t mind the terms—I’d be willing to stand a thousand such jokes to have you here. Well, to think of that performance! I don’t deny it, I was most putrified with astonishment when you give me that smack.”

We had dinner out in that broad open passage betwixt the house and the kitchen; and there was things enough on that table for seven families—and all hot, too; none of your flabby, tough meat that's laid in a cupboard in a damp cellar all night and tastes like a hunk of old cold cannibal in the morning. Uncle Silas he asked a pretty long blessing over it, but it was worth it; and it didn't cool it a bit, neither, the way I've seen them kind of interruptions do lots of times. There was a considerable good deal of talk all the afternoon, and me and Tom was on the lookout all the time; but it warn't no use, they didn't happen to say nothing about any runaway nigger, and we was afraid to try to work up to it. But at supper, at night, one of the little boys says:

"Pa, mayn't Tom and Sid and me go to the show?"

"No," says the old man, "I reckon there ain't going to be any; and you couldn't go if there was; because the runaway nigger told Burton and me all about that scandalous show, and Burton said he would tell the people; so I reckon they've drove the owdacious loafers out of town before this time."

So there it was!—but I couldn't help it. Tom and me was to sleep in the same room and bed; so, being tired, we bid good-night and went up to bed right after supper, and clumb out of the window and down the lightning-rod, and shoved for the town; for I didn't believe anybody was going to give the king and the duke a hint, and so if I didn't hurry up and give them one they'd get into trouble sure.

On the road Tom he told me all about how it was reckoned I was murdered, and how pap disappeared pretty soon, and didn't come back no more, and what a stir there was when Jim run away; and I told Tom all about our Royal Nonesuch rapscallions, and as much of the raft voyage as I had time to; and as we struck into the town and up through the—here comes a raging rush of people with torches, and an awful whooping and yelling, and banging tin pans and blowing horns; and we jumped to one side to let them go by; and as they went by I see they had the king and the duke astraddle of a rail—that is, I knowed it WAS the king and the duke, though they was all over tar and feathers, and didn't look like nothing in the world that was human—just looked like a couple of monstrous big soldier-plumes. Well, it made me sick to see it; and I

was sorry for them poor pitiful rascals, it seemed like I couldn’t ever feel any hardness against them any more in the world. It was a dreadful thing to see. Human beings CAN be awful cruel to one another.

We see we was too late—couldn’t do no good. We asked some stragglers about it, and they said everybody went to the show looking very innocent; and laid low and kept dark till the poor old king was in the middle of his cavortings on the stage; then somebody give a signal, and the house rose up and went for them.

So we poked along back home, and I warn’t feeling so brash as I was before, but kind of ornery, and humble, and to blame, somehow—though I hadn’t done nothing. But that’s always the way; it don’t make no difference whether you do right or wrong, a person’s conscience ain’t got no sense, and just goes for him anyway. If I had a yaller dog that didn’t know no more than a person’s conscience does I would pison him. It takes up more room than all the rest of a person’s insides, and yet ain’t no good, nohow. Tom Sawyer he says the same.

Chapter XXXIV

WE stopped talking, and got to thinking. By and by Tom says:

“Looky here, Huck, what fools we are to not think of it before! I bet I know where Jim is.”

“No! Where?”

“In that hut down by the ash-hopper. Why, looky here. When we was at dinner, didn’t you see a nigger man go in there with some vittles?”

“Yes.”

“What did you think the vittles was for?”

“For a dog.”

“So ‘d I. Well, it wasn’t for a dog.”

“Why?”

“Because part of it was watermelon.”

“So it was—I noticed it. Well, it does beat all that I never thought about a dog not eating watermelon. It shows how a body can see and don’t see at the same time.”

“Well, the nigger unlocked the padlock when he went in, and he locked it again when he came out. He fetched uncle a key about the time we got up from table—same key, I bet. Watermelon shows man, lock shows prisoner; and it ain’t likely there’s two prisoners on such a little plantation, and where the people’s all so kind and good. Jim’s the prisoner. All right—I’m glad we found it out detective fashion; I wouldn’t give shucks for any other way. Now you work your mind, and study out a plan to steal Jim, and I will study out one, too; and we’ll take the one we like the best.”

What a head for just a boy to have! If I had Tom Sawyer’s head I wouldn’t trade it off to be a duke, nor mate of a steamboat, nor clown in a circus, nor nothing I can think of. I went to thinking out a plan, but only just to be doing something; I knowed very well where the right plan was going to come from. Pretty soon Tom says:

“Ready?”

“Yes,” I says.

“All right—bring it out.”

“My plan is this,” I says. “We can easy find out if it’s Jim in there. Then get up my canoe to-morrow night, and fetch my raft over from the island. Then the first dark night that comes steal the key out of the old man’s britches after he goes to bed, and shove off down the river on the raft with Jim, hiding daytimes and running nights, the way me and Jim used to do before. Wouldn’t that plan work?”

“WORK? Why, cert’nly it would work, like rats a-fighting. But it’s too blame’ simple; there ain’t nothing TO it. What’s the good of a plan that ain’t no more trouble than that? It’s as mild as goose-milk. Why, Huck, it wouldn’t make no more talk than breaking into a soap factory.”

I never said nothing, because I warn’t expecting nothing different; but I knowed mighty well that whenever he got HIS plan ready it wouldn’t have none of them objections to it.

And it didn’t. He told me what it was, and I see in a minute it was worth fifteen of mine for style, and would make Jim just as free a man as mine would, and maybe get us all killed besides. So I was satisfied, and said we would waltz in on it. I needn’t tell what it was here, because I knowed it wouldn’t stay the way, it was. I knowed he would be changing

it around every which way as we went along, and heaving in new bullinesses wherever he got a chance. And that is what he done.

Well, one thing was dead sure, and that was that Tom Sawyer was in earnest, and was actuly going to help steal that nigger out of slavery. That was the thing that was too many for me. Here was a boy that was respectable and well brung up; and had a character to lose; and folks at home that had characters; and he was bright and not leather-headed; and knowing and not ignorant; and not mean, but kind; and yet here he was, without any more pride, or rightness, or feeling, than to stoop to this business, and make himself a shame, and his family a shame, before everybody. I COULDN'T understand it no way at all. It was outrageous, and I knowed I ought to just up and tell him so; and so be his true friend, and let him quit the thing right where he was and save himself. And I DID start to tell him; but he shut me up, and says:

"Don't you reckon I know what I'm about? Don't I generly know what I'm about?"

"Yes."

"Didn't I SAY I was going to help steal the nigger?"

"Yes."

"WELL, then."

That's all he said, and that's all I said. It warn't no use to say any more; because when he said he'd do a thing, he always done it. But I couldn't make out how he was willing to go into this thing; so I just let it go, and never bothered no more about it. If he was bound to have it so, I couldn't help it.

When we got home the house was all dark and still; so we went on down to the hut by the ash-hopper for to examine it. We went through the yard so as to see what the hounds would do. They knowed us, and didn't make no more noise than country dogs is always doing when anything comes by in the night. When we got to the cabin we took a look at the front and the two sides; and on the side I warn't acquainted with—which was the north side—we found a square window-hole, up tolerable high, with just one stout board nailed across it. I says:

"Here's the ticket. This hole's big enough for Jim to get through if we wrench off the board."

汤姆说:

"就这么简单，因为针锋相对达脚，三行，并作为容易，因为玩逃学. 我希望我们可以找到一个方法就是更复杂一点比的是，哈克."

"好吧，那么，"我说，"如何'll它做到看到他了，我做的之前我是被谋杀的那个时候？"

"这是更喜欢"，他说。"这是真的神秘和麻烦，以及良好的"他说，"但是我打赌我们可以找到一种方式，是两倍长。没有没有快点；le的继续寻找。"

时间流逝的茅屋和栅栏，在后面，是一个精益，加入该小屋檐，而是做出来的木板。这是因为，只要小屋，但是狭窄的—只有大约六英尺宽。门就是在南端，是上锁的. 汤姆他去肥皂水壶和周围搜查，并取回铁的事情，他们提盖；因此，他认和珍贵的主食。链条掉了下来，和我们打开门进去，闭嘴，和袭击一匹配，并看到棚只有建立针对小屋和没有连接；以及有警告，没有楼舍，也不是什么也没有但是一些老的生锈的演出锄头和铁锹和镐和一个残废的犁。比赛了，所以没有我们，猛中钉再次，门是锁着的一样好过。汤姆很快乐。他说;

"现在我们所有的权利。我们会把他挖出来的。它将需要大约一个星期！"

然后我们就开始为家里，和我去后门—你只有拉鹿皮锁字，他们没有固定的门—但是警告不浪漫主义足够的汤姆*索亚；没有办法做到他，但他必须爬上闪电-杆。但之后他得到了一半的方式，约三倍，而错过了火灾和降的每一次和最后一次最坏他的大脑，他认为他得给它；但是之后，他是他休息允许他会给她一个转运气，这一次，他做了旅行。

在早上我们是在一天的休息，并向下的黑鬼船舱来的宠物狗和做朋友的黑鬼喂吉姆—如果它是吉姆是被送入。黑人只是得到通过早开始的领域；和吉姆的黑鬼是堆积如山的锡

锅面包和肉的东西；而其他人离开时，
关键是来自房子。

这个黑鬼有一个脾气很好，笑-为首的脸和他的羊毛
是所有被绑在小束有线。 这是让女巫
关闭。 他说女巫是缠着他可怕的夜晚，
使他看到所有种奇怪的事情，并且听取所有种奇怪的
词和噪音，并且他不相信他曾经被迷惑久
之前，在他的生活。 他得到了那工作，并得到运行在所有关
他的麻烦，他忘了所有关于什么他会被一个要做。 因此，汤姆
说：

"有什么，除了吃的吗？ 去喂狗吗？"

黑鬼那种笑了围绕逐步过他的脸，就像的时候
你举一个碎砖在泥水坑，他说：

"是的，火星Sid，一只狗。 Cur'我们的狗，太。 不你想要去连接
看看'im?"

"是的。"

我弯腰驼背汤姆，低声说：

"你们要走了，就在这里，在黎明时分? 警告不该计划。"

"不，它警告说不，但它是该计划现在"。

因此，草他，我们一起去，但我不喜欢它了。 当我们到了
在我们不可能几乎没有看到任何东西，这是使黑暗的，但吉姆就在那里，
确保有足够，并能看到我们，他唱道：

"为什么，哈克! En良好的局域网'! ain'dat米斯托汤姆？"

我只是知道怎么会；我只是预期。 我不知道
什么都没有做；并且如果我不得不我不能做它，因为那个黑鬼打掉
在说：

"为什么，德亲切的缘故！ 做他知道你genlmen?"

我们可以看到漂亮的好。 汤姆他看起来在黑人，稳定
和那种不知道，说：

"没人知道我们吗？"

"为什么,dis-你逃亡的黑奴."

"我不觉得他不会，但什么把那个放到你的头?"

"什么把它放dar? 没有他jis'综合安全分遣队分钟唱出来就像他知道
你好吗？"

汤姆说，在一个困惑的方式：

"嗯,这是强大的奇怪的。 谁唱的? 当他唱
出来吗? 他怎么唱? " 而转向我，完全ca我，并说，
"你有没有听到任何人都唱出来吗? "

当然还有警告，没有什么可说的但是有一件事，所以我说:
"没有，我没听到没有人说什么。"
然后他转到吉姆，看起来他像他从来没有看到他
之前，并说:
"你有没有唱歌? "
"不，蛛网，"吉姆说"我的海恩没说什么，蛛网。"
"不是一个词吗?"
"不，蛛网，我hain不说一个词。"
"你有没有看到我们之前? "
"不，蛛网；不是因为我知道。"
因此，汤姆变成了黑人，这是在找野外和痛心，
并说，种严重的:
"你怎么想是你的问题呢? 是什么让
你认为有人唱出来吗? "
"哦，爸爸-怪'女巫，蛛网，连接我希望我已经死了，我做。
Dey的awluz，蛛网，连接dey做mos'杀死我，戴伊sk'yers我如此。 请
不要告诉任何人'回合这蛛网，er ole火星塞拉斯他会斯科尔我说，'加濑
他说人家是不是没有女巫。 我jis希望善他是唯一在现在
—DEN他会怎么说! 我jis'打赌他不能'的现有办法下不要蜘蛛'
它综合安全分遣队的时间。 但它awluz jis'；人dat的SOT，停留sot;人家不会
看到诺斯'n'en现出来f'r deyselves、连接的，当你微它连接
告诉um'回合，dey doan'b'lieve你。"

汤姆给他一分钱，并且说，我们不会告诉任何人；并且告诉
他买一些更多线程，以配合他的羊毛；然后看着
吉姆，说:
"我不知道，如果塞拉斯的叔叔是要挂这个黑鬼. 如果我
抓到一个黑人，这是忘恩负义的足够逃走的，我不会给
他起来，我会绞死他。" 虽然黑人走到门看看
在分钱，咬它看如果它是好的，他窃窃私语吉姆说:
"永远不要让我们知道我们。 如果你听到任何挖去
晚，这是我们；我们要你自由。"

吉姆*只有时候抓住我们的手挤；然后
鬼来了回来了，我们说我们会再来一些时间，如果黑人
想要我们；他说他会、更特别是如果这是黑暗的，
因为巫婆去了他，主要是在黑暗中，这是很好的
有人周围。

第一章XXXV

这将是大多数小时然而，直到早餐，所以我们留和袭击了下来，
进入树林，因为汤姆说我们得有一些光看看怎么
挖掘，一个灯笼使太多，可能会给我们惹麻烦；
我们必须有一个他们中的很多烂块叫做狐狸-火，
而只是让一个柔软的那种发光的时候你把它们放在一个黑暗的地方。
我们取一抱，并把它藏在杂草，并设置下来休息，
汤姆说，那种不满：

"指责它,这整件事只是作为容易和尴尬，因为它可以。
因此，这使得它很烂难以获得长达一个困难的计划。 没有
没有看守被迷药—现在应该有一个守望。
没有即使是一只狗给一个睡觉的混合物。 还有吉姆
链接的一条腿，一个十脚链，到腿上他的床：为什么，所有
你要做的就是起床架和滑掉链。 叔叔
西他信任的每个人都;发送的关键爱尔啤头黑鬼，而
不要发送没有人来看黑人。 吉姆帮一下了，
窗孔在此之前，只有不会没有尝试使用的旅行
有一个十脚链上他的腿。 为什么，草，哈克，这是最愚蠢的
安排，我曾经看到。 你得明所有的困难。 好吧，我们
不能帮助它，我们必须做的最好的，我们可以用的材料，我们已经有了。
无论如何，有一件事—还有更多的荣幸让他出
过很多的困难和危险，那里有警告不他们中的一个
带给你的人这是他们的责任提供他们，和
你有图谋，他们都出来了你自己的头上。 现在来看只是
一件事的灯笼。 当你来到寒冷的事实，我们
只需要让在那个灯的resky. 为什么，我们可以用
火炬游行，如果我们希望，我相信。 现在，虽然我认为它,

我们要捕猎的东西做一个看到的第一个机会，我们
得到的。"

"我们想做什么的看到了什么？"

"我们想做什么的看到了什么？ 海恩不我们得看到了腿的吉姆的
床断，从而获得的链松?"

"为什么，你刚才说的一个机构可以起床架和滑的
链"。

"嗯，如果那是不是只喜欢你，哈克. 你可以得到的
婴儿-schooliest的方式会在一个东西。 为什么，海恩不你曾经读任何
书籍吗？ —男爵Trenck，也不大情圣，也不Benvenuto Chelleeny,
也不是亨利四., 也没有他们的英雄吗？ 谁听说过的得到一个
囚犯松在这样的一个老maidy的方式吗？ 不，所有的最好的
当局不是看到了床-腿在两个，让它只是如此，并
吞木屑，所以它不能被发现，并把一些污垢和润滑脂
的周围啥样的地方，所以非常敏锐seneskal看不到有任何迹象
，它是被人锯掉，并且认为床腿是完美的声音。 然后，
晚你准备好了，取的腿踢，下她去；滑掉你
链，你在这儿。 什么都没做但是拴绳子的阶梯的
城垛，shin下降，打断你的腿在护城河—因为一个绳
梯子是九英尺太短了，你知道—还有你的马和
你值得信赖的vassles，他们把你和你扔跨马鞍，
并远离你去到你的母Langudoc，或纳瓦拉，或者无论它是。
这是华而不实的，哈克。 我希望有一条护城河这个小屋。 如果我们得到时间，
当晚的逃跑，我们就会挖出一个"。

我说：

"我们想做什么的护城河的时候我们要蛇他出去
从下舱?"

但他从来没有听说过我。 他已经把我忘了和其他一切。 他
有他的下巴，在他的另一方面，思想。 很快，他叹气和动摇他的
头，然后再一次叹息，并说：

"不，这不会做的—有没有足够的必要性。"

"为什么？" 我所说的。

"为什么，看到吉姆的腿断，"他说。

"良好的土地！" 我说，"你为什么，不过是没有必要。 和什么
你会想要看见他的腿断为，无论如何？"

"好吧，一些最好的当局已经做到了。 他们不能获得的
链的关闭，所以他们只是切断他们的手关闭和猛。 和一条腿会
更好。 但我们得让那去。 没有足够的必要性，在这
种情况下，此外，吉姆是个黑鬼，并不会理解的原因
，以及它是如何定义在欧洲，所以我们会让它去。 但有
一件事—他可以有一个绳梯，我们可以撕裂了我们的床单和
让他一个绳梯足够容易。 我们可以把它送到他在一个派；
它主要是这样做的方式。 我已经等更糟糕的馅饼。"

"为什么，汤姆，你怎么谈的，"我说，"吉姆是不是有没有用
一个绳梯。"

"他已经得到了使用。 你怎么谈，你最好说，你不
对此一无所知。 他必须有一个绳梯；他们所做的。"

"什么民族，他可以用它做什么？"

"用它做什么？ 他可以把它藏在自己的床上，可以吗？" 这就是他们
所有做；他得到了，太。 哈克，你不过似乎并不想要做
什么，是定期的；你想开始一些新鲜的东西所有的
时间。 S'pose他不要用它做什么? 是不是有在自己的床上，一
思路，之后，他走了吗？ 不要你觉得他们会想clews? 对
当然他们会的。 你不会离开他们吗？ 这将是一个
漂亮的你好-做的，不会吧！ 我从来没听说过这样的事情。"

"好的，"我说，"如果它是在规定，他是得到了具有它所有
的权利，让他拥有它，因为我不想回去上没有规定；
但是有一件事，汤姆*索亚—如果我们要撕毁了我们的床单要
让吉姆一个绳梯，我们要获得成麻烦，萨莉阿姨，
只是为确保你出生。 现在，这样我看着它，hickry-树皮
的梯子不花费了没什么，不要浪费什么也没说，只是因为好
装载了一个馅饼，并且隐藏在草刻度，作为任何抹布的梯子，你可以
开始；以及作为吉姆，他是不是没有经验，所以他不在乎
什么样的"

"哦，胡说，哈克,如果我是无知你，我会保持安静—
这就是我想要做的。 谁曾听说过一个国家的囚犯逃避由一个
hickry-树皮梯？ 为什么，这是完全荒谬的。"

"嗯，所有权利,汤姆,修复它自己的方式；但是如果你把我的
咨询，你会让我借一片断的晾衣绳上。"

他说，将会做的。 和这给予他另一个想法，他说：

"借用一件衬衫了。"

"我们想做什么的一件衬衫，汤姆？"

"想给吉姆留一个杂志上"。

"日记你的奶奶—吉姆不能写"。

"S'pose他不能写的—他可以使标志着的衬衫，他不能，

如果我们让他一笔出的一个老锡匙或一段老铁桶圈?"

"为什么，汤姆，我们可以拉一根羽毛一只鹅，让他一个最好之一；以及更快的。"

"囚犯没有鹅周围的运行东-保持拉笔了，你这个笨蛋. 他们总是让他们的笔出的最艰难的最艰难的，troublesomest片的老黄铜制蜡烛或类似的东西，他们可以得到他们的手上；它需要他们几周和几个星期和几个月和几个月到的文件出来，也因为他们已经有了做到这一点的摩擦它在墙上。 他们不会用一个鹅羽毛如果他们有它。 这不是常规。"

"好吧，那么，什么我们让他墨出来的?"

"许多使得它的铁锈和泪水；但是，这是常见的排序和妇女；最好当局使用他们自己的血。 吉姆可以做到这一点；而当他想要发送的任何共同点普通的神秘信息，让世界知道他迷住了，他可以把它写在底部的锡板，用叉子，并把它扔出了窗口。 的铁面始终这样做，这是一个怪的良好方式。"

"吉姆没有锡板。 他们喂他在平底锅。"

"这不是什么；我们可以让他一些。"

"没有人能阅读他的板。"

"这是不是有什么要用它做，哈克. 所有他有做的是写板上，并把它扔出去。 你不能读它。 为什么，一半的时间你可以不读什么一个囚犯写在锡板，或其他任何地方。"

"好吧，那么，有什么感觉在浪费车牌？"

"为什么责怪这一切，它是不是囚犯的板。"

"但这是谁的板块，不是吗？"

"嗯，高级恩这是什么？ 什么囚犯的照顾他们—"

他断绝了，因为我们听到了早餐角吹。 所以
我们清除出去的房子。

沿着在早上，我借了一片白色的衬衫脱的
衣服线，我发现了一个古老的口袋，把他们放在这，我们走
下来，并得到福克斯-火，并放在了。 我叫它的借款，
因为这是什么pap始终称呼它的；但是汤姆说，它警告不
借款，这是偷窃。 他说我们是代表囚犯；
囚犯不在乎他们怎么得到的东西所以他们得到它，并且没有人不
责怪他们。 这是不是没有犯罪在一个囚犯偷走的事
他需要得到离开，汤姆说，这是他的权利；因此，只要我们
是代表一个囚犯，我们有一个完美的权利偷东西在
这个地方我们有少用于获得自己走出监狱。 他
说如果我们警告不囚犯，这将是一个非常不同的事情，并没有人
但是一个意思，故意刁难的人会偷的时候，他警告不一的囚犯。 因此，我们
允许我们窃取的一切有来得心应手。 但
他做了一个强大惊小怪的，有一天，之后，当我偷西瓜
的黑鬼片吃；以及他让我去给黑鬼一
毛钱没有告诉他它是什么。 汤姆说什么他的意思
是，我们可以窃取我们所需要的任何东西。 好吧，我说，我需要
西瓜。 但他说过我不需要走出监狱；有
的差距。 他说如果我想要隐藏的刀子，并
偷运到吉姆杀seneskal与，就会一直是所有权利。 所以我
让它去，虽然我不能看不到的优势在我代表一个
囚犯如果我得到了设置下来，并嚼了很多的金叶子的区别
那样每次我见到一个机会，猪一个西瓜。

嗯，我是说，我们等待这天上午直到每个人都
定居下来业务，并且没有人在视线周围的院子；然后汤姆
他带睡觉到的精益，同时我站在一块保留
表。 通过和他出来了，我们去定下的
柴堆谈。 他说：

"一切的一切权利，现在除了工具；这就是容易的固定。"

"工具？ " 我所说的。

"是的."

"工具是为了什么？ "

"为什么,挖掘。 我们是不是要去啃他，是我们？ "

"不是他们残废旧挑选和事在有足够好
挖一个黑鬼了？" 我说。

他打开我，看怜悯足以使一体哭，
说：

"哈克,你有没有听到囚犯具有镐和
铁铲，而所有现代化的便利在他的衣柜里，自己挖
出来的？ 现在我想问你—如果你有任何合理性在你
的—一个什么样的展示会，让他成为英雄吗？ 为什么，
他们可以借给他的钥匙并用它做。 镐和
铁铲—为什么，他们就不会提供他们为国王。"

"好吧，那么，"我说，"如果我们不想镐和铁铲，什么
我们想要的？"

"一对夫妇的情况下刀."

"挖基础的从下，舱？"

"是的."

"混淆，这是愚蠢的，汤姆。"

"它不作任何区别如何愚蠢的是，它正确的方式—
这是常规的方式。 也没有任何其他方式，这曾经是我
听到的，我已经读过你所有的书籍，提供任何信息有关
这些事情。 他们总是挖掘出与的情况下刀—而不是通过
土，心；generly它通过坚硬的岩石。 它需要它们几周
和几个星期和几个星期里，并永永远远。 为什么，看看他们中的一个
囚犯在底地牢的城堡Deef，在海港的
马赛，挖出自己的出路；多久，他在这，你
看？"

"我不知道。"

"好的，猜测"。

"我不知道。 一个半月。"

"第三十七年，他在中国。 这就是的
那种。 我希望这个堡垒，是坚硬的岩石。"

"吉姆不知道没有人在中国。"

"那是什么得到做与它？ 也没有其它的家伙。 但
你总是徘徊在一个侧面问题。 为什么你不能坚持
主要的一点?"

"好吧—我不关心他出来，所以他出来；以及
吉姆不要，无论是，我估计。 但有一件事情，无论如何—吉姆的太旧
被挖出了一个情况下-把刀。 他不会持续。"

"是的，他将过去，太多。 你不觉得它是要采取第三十
七年来挖掘出通过一个污物基金会，你呢？ "

"需要多长时间，汤姆？ "

"好了，我们不能resk长为我们应该的，因为它不
需要很长时间为塞拉斯的叔叔来听听那里的新奥尔良。
他会听到吉姆是不是从那里。 然后他下一步的行动将宣传
吉姆，或者类似的东西。 所以我们不能resk长挖掘他
为我们应该。 由的权利，我想我们应该几岁；
但是，我们不能。 事情是如此的不确定性，我建议是这样的：
我们真的挖吧，快，我们能；以及在那之后，我们可以让
上，我们自己，我们是在第三十七年。 然后我们可以
抓他出来，并匆忙他离开第一次有一个警钟。 是的，我
觉得这会是最好的方式。"

"现在，有意义在于，"我说。 "让别费用
没有用的；让上不是没有麻烦；如果它的任何目的，我不介意
让我们在这一百五十年。 它不应变我
没有的，之后我得到了我的手中。 因此，我将莫西沿着现在，smouch一
对夫妇的情况下-刀。"

"Smouch三，"他说，"我们想要做一个看见了。"

"汤姆,如果不是unregular和非宗教的，以sejest它的，"我说，"没有
一个老的生锈的锯片周围那边的坚持下天气
登机后面，无烟房子。"

他看起来的那种疲劳和气馁-像，并说：

"这不是没有用的尝试了解你什么都没有，哈克。 运行着
smouch的刀—他们三人。" 所以我做了。

第一章XXXVI

尽快，我们认为每个人都是睡着了的那天晚上我们去
避雷针，并关闭了自己在贫，并得到了我们的
一堆的狐狸-火灾，并开始工作。 我们扫清一切的方式，
大约四五英尺沿着中间的底部记录。 汤姆说我们

是正确的背后吉姆的床上现在，我们挖下，当我们
通过了没有没有人在船舱永远不知道有任何
有孔，因为吉姆的反销挂下来的大多数在地上，
你就必须提高它和下看看孔。因此，我们挖掘和
挖与的情况下刀直到最午夜，然后，我们是狗-累了，
和我们的双手被泡，但你不能看见我们做
什么几乎没有。最后，我说：

"这不是没有三十七年的工作；这是第三十八年的工作，汤姆索亚."

他从来没有说什么。但他叹了一口气，很快，他停止挖掘，然后对一个好一点的话，我知道，他的思想。然后他说:

"这不是没有用的，哈克，这不是一个要工作。如果我们是囚犯它会，因为然后我们就会有多年，因为我们想要的，没有快点；我们不会得到但几分钟，以挖掘，每天，当他们是变化的表，并且使我们的手就不会起泡，我们可以保持它正确，年复一年，这样做是正确的，并且它的方式应该要做。但是，我们不能欺骗；我们得赶；我们没有空闲时间。如果我们是放在一个晚上这种方式我们会有敲掉一个星期来让我们的手中得到很好的—不能触摸的情况下刀与他们早。"

"好吧，那么，什么我们要做的事，汤姆？"

"我会告诉你。这是不对的，它是不道德的，我不喜欢它出去，但不仅仅是一样的：我们把他挖出来的挑选，并让这种情况下-刀。"

"现在你会说话!" 我说，"你的头得到平等和平等所有的时间，汤姆*索亚"，我说。"挑选是件事情、道德或不道德；以及至于我，我不在乎哪里哪里的道德，有什么办法呢当我开始在偷一个黑人，或一个西瓜，或者一个星期日学校的书，我不是方法，尤其是它是如何这样做的，它的完成。我想要是我的黑人；或者什么我想要的是我的西瓜；或者什么我想要的是我周日学校的书；以及如果一个选择是最方便的事情，这就是事情我要挖掘这黑鬼或者西瓜或者星期天学校的书；并且我不要给一只死老鼠什么的当局认为有关这nuther."

"好的"他说，"没有理由挑选和让-在一种情况下
这样；如果警告不是这样，我不会批准它，也不我不会的立场
和看到的规则打破了—因为权利是正确的，错误是错误的，
一个身体不是没有商业做错了的时候，他不是无知和
知道的更好。 它可能会回答你挖Jim出了一个挑选，
没有任何让上的，因为你不知道没有更好的，但它
不会对我，因为我知道更好。 给我一个情况下-把刀。"

他有他自己通过他，但我交给他我的。 他扔了下去，
并且说：

"给我一个情况下-把刀。"

我不知道该怎么做—但然后我想象的。 我划了周围
在旧的工具，并得到了一镐头和给他，他带着它
去工作，并且从来没有说过一个字。

他总是只说尤其如此。 完整的原则。

那么我有一把铲子，然后我们选择了和铲，把有关，
并做出了毛飞行。 我们坚持大约一个半小时，这是因为
，只要我们能站起来；但是我们有一个很好的处理的一个洞，以显示
它。 当我回到楼上我看着窗，看到汤姆做
他最好的水平与避雷针，但他不能来了，他的手
是那么的痛。 最后，他说：

"这不是没有用的，它不能这样做。 什么你觉得我做吗？ 不能
你觉得没有办法?"

"是的，"我说，"但是，我认为这是不正规的。 来上楼梯，
让它闪电-棒。"

所以他做了。

第二天，汤姆偷了一个铅锡合金勺子和一个黄铜制蜡烛在
房子，使一些笔为吉姆的六个牛脂蜡烛；以及
我挂着黑人小屋，并奠定了一个机会，并偷走了三锡
板。 汤姆说，这是不足够的；但是我说没有人会不会看
板，吉姆扔了出来，因为他们会落在狗-茴香和
jimpson草窗下洞的—然后我们可以搬回他们
和他可以用他们再来。 因此，汤姆很满意。 然后他说:

"现在，要研究出的是，如何获得的事情，吉姆。"

"带他们在通过孔的，"我说，"当我们得到它的完成。"

他只是看上去轻蔑，并说什么没有人
听说过这样的一个愚蠢的主意，然后他去了研究。 通过和通过，他
说他已经加密了的两个或三个方面，但警告不需要
决定他们的任何呢。 说我们会有后吉姆的第一个。

那晚我们去了闪电-棒的一点之后十年，采取了
一个蜡烛，并听取了下窗孔，并听取了
吉姆打鼾；因此，我们投了它，并且它没有唤醒他。 然后我们转过身
在挑铁锹，并在大约两个半小时的工作
已完成。 我们蹑手蹑脚下吉姆的床和入舱和刨
和周围找到的蜡烛，点燃它，并且站在吉姆一段时间，并
发现了他找丰盛的健康，然后我们吵醒他温和的
和渐进的。 他很高兴看到我们，他大哭了，叫我们亲爱的，
和所有宠物的名字，他可以想到的；以及是对具有我们追捕一个
冷凿切链断他的腿，和清除
出去，而不会失去任何时候。 但是汤姆，他表明他如何unregular它
会，并设置下来并告诉他所有关于我们的计划，以及我们如何
可以改变他们在一分钟内任何时候有一个警报；以及不可
少的害怕，因为我们会看到他得离开，肯定的。 所以吉姆，他
说这一切都是正确的，并且我们有谈过的旧时光一段时间，
然后汤姆问了很多问题，而吉姆告诉他叔叔
塞拉斯来的每一天或两天祈祷与他和萨莉阿姨来
看，如果他是舒适的，并有很多吃的，而他们两个是
那种，因为他们可能是，汤姆说：

"现在我知道怎么修它。 我们会送你一些事情他们。"

我所说的，"不这样做的种类；这是一个最蠢驴
想法我曾经袭击"，但他从来没有注意到我的去。
这是他的方式的时候，他得到了他的计划设定的。

所以他告诉吉姆我们如何会走私的绳梯派和
其他大事通过Nat，黑鬼，喂他，他必须在
监视，并不会感到惊讶，而不是让Nat看到他开放他们；我们
将把小东西在叔叔的外衣袋，他必须偷
出来；并且我们将配合的事情要的姨妈的围裙-串或把它们放在她的
围裙-口袋里， 如果我们有了一个机会；并且告诉他什么他们会和
他们。 并告诉他如何保持一个杂志的衬衫上有
他的血液，而这一切。 他告诉了他一切。 吉姆，他看不到没有

意义在于它的大部分，但他允许我们是白人和懂得
比他好，所以他感到满意，并说他会做一切只是因为
汤姆说。

吉姆有很多的玉米棒管道和烟草；因此，我们有一个权利下
良好的社交的时间；然后，我们爬了出来，通过孔，并使家庭
到床上，双手看起来像他们一直chawed. 汤姆是在高
精神。 他说这是最好的乐趣，他曾经在他的一生，并最
智能；并且说，如果他只能看到他的方式，给它我们会保持它
的所有其余的我们的生活中和离开吉姆我们的孩子得出来；对于他
相信Jim会喜欢它的更好和更好的他更有用
到它。 他说，在这种方式，它可能会串起来一样多的第八十
年，并将是最好的时间记录在案。 他说这会使我们
所庆祝的这有一个手。

在早晨我们走了出去到圆木和切碎了的
铜制蜡烛入方便的大小和汤姆把它们放和锡
匙在他口袋里。 然后我们去黑鬼屋，而我得到了
Nat通知即关闭，汤姆猛的一块烛台中的一个
玉米-推迟实施，这是吉姆的锅，和我们一起去与Nat看到
它的工作，并且它只是工作的崇高；当Jim位成它的最
捣碎他所有的牙齿了，有警告永远不任何东西可以工作
得更好。 汤姆这么说他自己。 吉姆，他从来没有让但是，它只是
一块岩石或类似的东西，总是进入的面包，
你知道的；但在那之后，他从来没有点成什么但什么他捅他的
叉子进入它在三个或者四方第一次。

虽然我们是一个独立存在的dimmish光，这里来了
一对夫妇的猎犬胀在从吉姆的床；他们一直在
打桩，直到有十一人，并且有警告不不房间，在
那里得到你的呼吸。 通过jings，我们忘了系，瘦到门！
黑鬼Nat他只是叫喊"女巫"一旦，以及倾复在
地板之间的狗，并开始呻吟想他快要死了。
汤姆猛地开门扔了一块吉姆的肉类和
狗去，并在两秒钟内，他是出自己和后再
关上门，我知道他会固定的其他门。 然后他
去了工作，黑鬼，哄他宠爱他，并且要求他

如果他是想象他看到的东西。 他提出，并
眨眼他的眼睛周围，并说：

"火星Sid，你会说我是个傻瓜，但如果我没b'lieve我看到的大多数一万只狗，er魔鬼，er一些恩，我希望我可能会死的权利唯一在你们这种乱七八糟的轨道。 我没有，mos'sholy. 火星Sid，我觉得我觉得，嗯，sah;dey是对我的一切。 爸爸取它，我jis'希望我可以git我的汉在一个er dem女巫jis'wunst上'y jis'wunst—这都是我ast. 但mos'ly我希望他们会一辈子'孤独的，我不会。"

汤姆说：

"好吧，我告诉你我的想法。 什么让他们来这里只是在这种逃亡的黑奴的早餐时间? 这是因为他们饿了；这就是原因。 你让他们的女巫的馅饼；这是你的事要做。"

"但是我的局域网'，火星Sid，怎么是我gwyne让一个女巫馅饼？ 我doan'知道如何做到这一点。 我hain't侯er sich的事情b'fo'."

"好吧，那么，我会让我自己。"

"你会做的，亲爱的？—你会吗？ 我会wusshup de groun'und'yo的脚，我会的！"

"好的，我会这样做的，看到它是你的，你已经好到我们和我们的逃亡黑人。 但你得强大的小心。 当我们过来，你把你的回；然后无论我们把锅，你不让你看到它在所有。 和你没看吉姆卸载的泛的东西可能发生的事情，我不知道是什么。 和上述所有，不要你处理女巫-事情。"

"HANNEL'm,火星Sid? 什么是你一个-说说你吧? 我不躺de重呃我的手指上嗯，不f'r十hund会千'n亿美元，我不会的。"

第一章XXXVII

这些都是固定的。 那么我们走了，去了rubbage堆在后面的院子里，在那里他们保留的旧靴子，衣衫褴褛，并件的瓶子，穿着出锡的事情，并且所有这种卡车，并抓周围找到了一个老锡washpan，并停止了孔我们可以烤饼在，并把它放下酒窖和偷了它的全面粉并启动早餐， 和发现一对夫妇的瓦-钉子，汤姆

说将是方便的针对一个囚犯他的拼字游戏的名称和悲伤在
地牢墙，并放弃了一项他们在萨莉阿姨的围裙-
口袋里这是上挂着一把椅子和t'other我们困在电频带的
叔叔塞拉斯的帽子，这是对主席团，因为我们听到了
儿童说，他们的巴勒斯坦权力机构和马是要逃亡的黑奴家
今天上午，然后去了早餐， 汤姆掉铅锡合金
勺子的叔叔塞拉斯的外套口袋里和萨莉阿姨是不来呢，所以
我们必须等待一小会儿。

当她来的她是热和红十字，并且不可能
几乎没有等待的祝福，然后她去泄水出来的咖啡
一方面裂的最方便儿童的头部与她的顶针有
其他的，说：

"我已经猎杀高我已经猎杀低，并且它不会击败所有的什么
成为你其他的衬衫。"

我的心摔了下来在我的肺和肝脏和事和
硬件的玉米壳开始我的喉咙之后，并得到了满足
时咳嗽，并被拍在桌子上，并采取了一个
儿童眼睛和卷他喜欢钓鱼-虫，让一个哭
出他的大小warwhoop，汤姆他转kinder蓝
周围的鳃， 和它的所有达到一个相当大的国家的事情，对
大约四分之一分钟，或如，我会卖出了
价格的一半，如果有一个投标人。 但在那之后，我们所有的权利再次—这
是突然惊讶的是它敲我们这样一种冷。 叔叔西拉
他说：

"这是最常见的好奇，我不能理解它。 我完全知道
好吧，我把它关闭，因为"

"因为你的海恩不会得到但有一。 只听的男人！ 我
知道你把它关闭，并且知道它通过一个更好的办法比你的羊毛-
极速存储器，也因为它是在clo的线昨天的—我看见
它有自己。 但它消失了，这是长期和短期的，
你只要改变一个红色的富兰恩际一直到我可以得到，时间使
新的一个。 它会是第三次我做了两年。 它只是让有
身体上的跳跃让你在衬衫；以及无论你做什么管理
做'm所有为更多的儿我能做出来。 一体'd想你会
了解采取某种形式的照顾他们在你的时间的生活。"

"我知道，莎莉，我不要尝试所有我可以。 但是它不应该被完全是我的错，因为，你知道，我没看见他们，也没有与他们的不同之处时，他们对我和我的不相信我曾经失去了他们中的一个关闭的我。"

"好吧，这不是你的错，如果你没有，西；你会做，如果可以的话，我估计。 和这件衬衫是不是所有的经历，nuther. 有一勺去了；而这还不是全部。 有十个，现在有的只有九个。 小腿有的衬衫，我估计，而小牛从来没有把勺子，那是肯定的。"

"为什么，还有什么了,莎莉?"

"有六个蜡烛走了—那是什么。 老鼠可以拿到了蜡烛，我认为他们没有，我不知道他们不会走开的整个地方，该方法你总是要阻止他们的洞和不这样做；如果他们警告不傻瓜他们会睡在你的头发，西拉—你就会永远也找不到它；但是你不能把勺子上的老鼠，我知道。"

"好，莎莉，我的错，我承认这一点；我已经失职；但是我不会让明天的过去，没有停止了他们的洞"。

"哦，我不会急着，明年会怎么做。 Matilda安吉丽娜Araminta菲尔普斯!"

打来的顶针了，孩子抢她的爪子出来的糖碗里没有鬼混任。 就在这时，黑人妇女的步骤的通道，并说：

"太太,dey的一片不见了。"

"一片不见了！ 嗯，对于土地的缘故！"

"我会停止他们孔到一天说，"叔叔西拉，看着悲伤.

"哦，共！—s'pose的大鼠采取了片? 那里就是它走了，丽泽?"

"Clah善良我hain没有概念,小姐'莎莉。 她怎么去clo'sline yistiddy，但是她完成了她是不是'大不mo'。"

"我认为，世界即将结束。 我从来没有看到拍它在所有我的生日。 一件衬衫，一片，以及一个勺子，六个可以"

"夫人"有一个年轻的黄色丫头，"dey是一个黄铜cannelstick小姐'n。"

"克莱尔从这里出去，你坏东西，呃，我会带一锅到你们！"

嗯，她只是一个碧凌. 我开始奠定了一个机会；我认为我会偷偷溜出去树林里，直到天主持。 她保持一个肆虐的沿着正确的，运行她的叛乱所有通过自己和其他人一样强大的温顺和宁静的；并在最后一个叔叔西拉，看种愚蠢的鱼了，汤匙从他的口袋里。 她停止，她的嘴打开她的手上；以及作为对我来说，我希望我是在Jeruslem或一个地方. 但是不长，因为她说:

"它只是作为我的预期。 所以你就在你的口袋里所有的时间；和就好像没你有其他事情那里。 怎么获得吗？ "

"我reely不知道，莎莉，"他说，那种道歉"，或者你知道的我会告诉。 我是一个学习过我的文本中的行为十七岁之前的早餐，我想我把它放在那里，没有注意到，这意味着把我的遗嘱中，它必须如此，因为我的遗嘱是不是，但我会去见；以及如果约会是在哪里我有它，我就知道我没有把它放在，那将显示，我奠定了约下来了勺子，和"

"哦，对土地的缘故！ 给身体其余！ 去'长现在，整个工具包和碧凌，你们；不要走近了我一次，直到我得回我的内心的和平。"

我一听说了她如果她一说它对自己说，让我们单独说出来，和我一起来了，听她的话如果我已经死了。 因为我们是通过设置房间老人，他拿起他的帽子和鹅卵石-钉倒在地板上，他只是只是把它捡起来，放在壁炉架子上，从来没有说过什么都没有，走了出去。 汤姆，看看他做到这一点，并铭记有关勺子，并说:

"好吧，这不是没有用来发送的东西，他没有更多的，他是不可靠的。" 然后他说："但是，他完成了我们一个很好的把勺子，无论如何，不知道它，和所以我们会去和他做一个没有他知道的吧—停止了他的老鼠洞"。

有一个高贵的好很多的地窖，它们花了一个小时，但我们完成作业的紧张和良好的和井然有序. 然后我们听取了步骤在楼，炸飞了我们的光线和躲；以及在这里的老人，一个蜡烛一手捆绑的东西在t'other，看起来心不在焉作为前一年最后一个。 他去了一个朝思暮想

周围，第一个老鼠洞然后另一个，直到他一直到他们所有。
然后他站在大约五分钟，拿牛油滴落的他的蜡烛
和思考。 然后他变成了缓慢和梦幻般的对楼梯上，
他说：

"嗯，为了我的生活我不可能记得，当我完成它。 我可以
告诉她现在，我警告不要责怪的老鼠。 但是永远不会
介意—让它去。 我想它不会做没有好处。"

所以他去-喃喃自语上楼梯，然后我们就离开了。 他是一个
强大的不错的老男人。 并且总是。

汤姆是一个很好的处理困扰该怎么做为一个勺子，但他
说我们得有它，所以他拿了一个想法。 当他加密出来
他告诉我，我们如何做的；然后我们去等待周围的
勺子-篮子里直到我们看见萨莉阿姨来，然后汤姆去了
计数匙和奠定他们推到一边，我滑的一个
他们我的袖子，汤姆说：

"为什么，萨莉阿姨，没有但九个汤匙。"

她说：

"去长到你的发挥，不要打扰我。 我知道更好的，我计算
'm自己。"

"嗯，我已经计算两次，阿姨，我不能让，但九个月。"

她看着所有的耐心，但是当然她来计数
任何人都会。

"我宣布以亲切的，那里不但是九！"，她说。 "为什么，什么样的
在世界的瘟疫把事情，我数'm。"

所以我滑倒我了，当她完成了计数、她
说：

"挂麻烦rubbage,疗法的十吧！"她看着
傲慢和困扰，两者。 但是汤姆说：

"为什么，阿姨，我不认为有十个。"

"你傻瓜，你没看到我最'm？"

"我知道，但是—"

"好吧，我数'm。"

所以我smouched一个，他们来了九、其它相同的时间。

好吧，她是一个撕开的方式—只是一个抖一切都过去了，她是如此的
疯狂。 但她计数，并计算，直到她得到了那腐坏她开始

在篮子里一勺有时；因此，三个的时候他们来
了正确的，并三次他们走出错误的。 然后她抓住了
篮子和抨击整个房子并把猫厨房-西
和她说cle找出并让她有一些和平，如果我们来
打扰她周围再次时间流逝，这和晚餐她的皮肤我们。 因此，我们
不得不奇怪的勺子，把它丢在她的围裙-口袋里虽然她是一个
给我们我们的帆船订单和吉姆有所有权利，以及她
瓦钉子在中午之前。 我们非常满意这项业务，
并汤姆允许它的价值两倍的麻烦，因为他说
现在她永远不能指望他们匙两次都再次救她的
生命；并且不会相信她就算他们的权利，如果她没有，与所述
，之后她对算她的头掉下三天，他
的判断，她很想得到它，并提供杀死任何人，想让她永远
指望他们任何的更多。

所以我们把片回线路上那天晚上，并且偷走了一个出
她的衣橱；以及保持在把它放回和偷它再一两
天直到她不知道有多少张她有任何的更多,而且她
没有照顾，并警告不要bullyrag的其余部分她的灵魂出
关于它的，并不指望他们又不是要拯救她的生命；她druther
先死.

所以我们所有的权利现在，这件衬衫和片和勺子
和蜡烛，通过帮助的小腿和大鼠和混合
计数；和的烛台，它警告不会没有后果的，它会
吹过来的。

但是这馅饼是一工作；我们有没有麻烦的那个馅饼。 我们
固定它掉下来的树林里，煮熟它有；而我们得到了它
完成最后和非常令人满意的，但并不是所有的在一天；并且我们已经
使用了三个洗盘全面粉之前，我们得到了通过，我们得到了
烧焦的几乎一切都过去了，在地方和眼睛放出来的烟雾；
因为，你看，我们没有想要什么，而是一个外壳， 我们不能
支撑它的权利，而她将永远屈服。 但当然我们想象
的正确方式在最后一个—这是煮的梯子，也在馅饼。 所以
然后我们奠定了吉姆的第二个夜晚，并撕毁了片都在
小串和扭曲它们在一起，很久以前的日光我们

一个可爱的绳子，你可以挂一个人。 我们让上花了九
个月，以使它。

并且在午前我们把它放到树林里，但它不会
进入馅饼。 正在作出的一整片，这种方式，有绳子
不够用于第四十馅饼如果我们想一想他们，以及大量遗留下来的
汤，或者香肠，或者任何你选择。 我们可以有一整
晚餐。

但是我们不需要它。 我们所需要的只是有足够的馅饼，
这样我们扔其余的距离。 我们不是厨师没有馅饼在
洗泛怕焊会融化；但是叔叔西，他有一个高贵的
黄铜变暖锅其他想法相当大的，因为它
属于他的一个世世代代有一个长长的木处理来
自英国与征服者威廉在五月花或一个
的他们早期的船舶，并被藏起来的阁楼有很多其他的旧
锅的事情是有价值的， 未在帐户的任何帐户，
因为他们警告，但考虑他们是历史遗迹，你知道，
我们蜿蜒她出，私人，并把她带下去，但她没有在
第一个馅饼，因为我们不知道怎样，但是她来了微笑在
最后一个。 我们把衬她的面，她在的煤，并
载她与布绳子，把一个团屋顶，和关闭
盖，并把热灰烬之上，并站在五尺，有的长
处理，冷静和舒适，并且在十五分钟内她变成了一个派
，是一个满意度来看待。 但人，等它想要
取一对夫妇的kags牙签沿着，如果那个绳梯
不会抽筋他的事我什么也不知道什么我
说的和他在足够的胃痛去他，直到下一个
时间，太。

Nat没有看起来的时候我们把馅饼女巫在吉姆的锅；并且我们把
三个锡板在锅底下的，除了吃；以及所以Jim
得到的一切所有权利，只要他通过自己，他闯入
的馅饼而把绳梯里他的草打勾，并抓
一些痕迹锡板和它扔出窗孔。

第一章XXXVIII

使他们笔是一个distressid艰难的工作，所以看见；以及
吉姆允许的题词是将会是最艰难的. 这是
一个囚犯已经拼字游戏在墙上。 但他必须有它，
汤姆说他会得到了；没有警告，没有任何情况下一个国家的囚犯不是
摸索他的碑文离开后，他的纹章。

"看看夫人简灰色的,"他说："看看在吉尔福特Dudley，看在
老的诺森伯兰郡! 为什么，哈克、s pose它是considerble麻烦吗？—
什么你要做什么？—你怎么会得到周围？ 吉姆要
做他的题字和徽章。 他们都这样做。"

吉姆说：

"为什么，汤姆，我hain不会得到任何外套o'臂；我hain不会得到nuffn但是
菜你ole衬衫,en你知道我要让德杂志上dat。"

"哦，你不明白，吉姆；一个徽章是非常不同的."

"好的，"我说，"吉姆的权利，无论如何，当他说他没有
徽章，因为他hain。"

"我觉得我知道的是，"汤姆说，"但是，你赌他会有一个
之前他出去的这个—因为他会出来的权利，并没有
不是没有缺陷，在他的记录。"

因此，虽然我和吉姆提交的笔在一个碎砖美元，吉姆，
一个使他的儿出去的黄铜和我做我的勺子,汤姆
集工作想出来的外衣的武器。 通过和通过，他说他会打
那么多好的他没有不知道其采取的，但有
一项他认为他会出决定。 他说：

"在标牌，我们就会有一个弯曲或在德克斯特的基地、萨特
马锐的规费，用一只狗，日落的，用于共同负责，并
根据他的脚链四面楚歌的，为奴的，雪佛龙公司VERT在
首席锯齿和三invected线上的一个领域湛蓝，与
nombril分猖獗在dancette缩;顶，一个逃亡的黑奴，
貂，与他捆绑在他的肩膀上有一条邪恶; 和一对夫妇
的gules的支持者，这是你和我的座右铭，马
FRETTA,点奥托。 把它从一本书—意味着更多的匆忙
的低速度"。

"Geewhillikins的，"我说，"但是什么其它的意思吗？"

"我们没有时间去打扰过，"他说，"我们要挖掘
像所有的混帐。"

"嗯，不管怎么说，"我说，"那是什么一些？ 什么坦白?"
"一坦白的—说是—你不需要知道什么一个fess。 我告诉他如何使其当他得到它。"
"哪里哪里，汤姆，"我说，"我认为您可能告诉一个人。 什么是酒吧邪恶?"
"噢，我不知道。 但是他得拥有它。 所有贵族。"
那只是他的方式。 如果它没有满足他解释的事情给你，他不会这样做。 你可能泵他一个星期，也不会让没有区别。
他得到了所有武器的外套的商业固定的，因此现在他开始在以完成其余的那一部分的工作，这是规划出一个悲哀的题词—吉姆说得有一个，就像他们全部完成。 他做了很多，写了一篇论文，并宣读他们，所以：
1. 这里一个俘虏的心捣毁。 2. 在这里，一个贫穷的囚犯，离弃通过的世界的朋友、担忧，他的悲伤的生活。 3. 在这里寂寞的心脏爆发，和一个破旧的精神去了其余之后的第三十七年，被单独囚禁。 4. 在这里，无家可归者和没有朋友，之后第三十七年的苦囚禁，死一个崇高的陌生人的、自然的儿子路易十四。
汤姆的声音打颤了，而他的阅读他们，他最坏了 当他完成了他不能没有办法让他的心哪一个吉姆拼字游戏到墙上，他们都是很好;但是在最后，他允许他会让他的拼字游戏他们所有。 吉姆说这会带他一年来拼字游戏这样的一个很大的卡车上的记录有一个钉子，他不知道如何使信，除了；但是汤姆说他会阻止他们了他，然后他不会有什么做的，但只是后续行。 然后很快，他说：
"来认为，日志是不是要做；他们没有记录的墙在地牢里：我们挖的铭文进入一个岩石。 我们去拿石头。"
吉姆说的岩石是比日志；他说，这将需要他这样的pison长的时间来挖他们进入一个摇滚他永远不会得到。 但是汤姆说他会让我帮他做到这一点。 然后，他看了看看如何我和吉姆是越来越随笔。 这是最令人讨厌的繁琐的辛勤工作和缓慢，并且没有给我手中没有得到

好的伤口，我们似乎没有作出任何进展，几乎没有；因此
汤姆说：

"我知道怎么修它。 我们得有一个摇滚的大衣的武器和
悲哀的碑文，我们可以一举两得同样的岩石。
有一个华而不实的大磨石在磨粉机，并且我们将smouch，
和雕刻的事情，和文件的笔和看到这一点。"

它警告不懒散没有一个想法；以及它警告不懈怠的磨石
nuther；但是我们允许我们解决这一问题。 它警告不太午夜呢，所以我们
清除出去，用于研磨机，使吉姆的工作。 我们smouched的
磨石，并设置了滚她的家里，但它是一个大多数国家的艰难
工作。 有时，做什么，我们能，我们不能让她落
了，她来了强大的近捣碎我们每时间。 汤姆说她
会得到我们中的一个，肯定的是，在我们得到了通过。 我们得到了她一半
的方式；然后我们垂直发挥出来，大多数淹死汗水。
我们看到这一警告没有使用；我们要去拿吉姆所以他提出了他的
床滑链的床-腿缠住它的全面和圆
他的脖子，并且我们爬了出来，通过我们的洞和向下在那里，和吉姆
和我放进那磨石走她喜欢什么；以及
监督汤姆. 他可以出，监督任何一个孩子我没有看到。 他
知道如何做的一切。

我们孔很大，但是它警告不够大，获得
磨石通过；但是吉姆他把选择和尽快取得很大
不够的。 然后汤姆标示出他们的东西它与钉，并设置
吉姆对他们的工作，与颗钉子凿子和螺栓，从
rubbage在贫要一个锤子，并告诉他的工作，直到余下的
他的蜡烛放弃他，然后他可以去睡觉了，隐藏的
磨石在他的草勾和睡眠。 然后我们帮他修复
他的链回床上-腿，准备上床睡觉自己。 但是汤姆
想的东西，并说：

"你有没有蜘蛛在这里，吉姆？ "

"不，蛛网，感谢上帝我hain不,汤姆."

"好吧，我们给你拿一些。"

"但保佑你，亲爱的，我doan想没有。 我的别怕联合国um。 我jis'
's很快就会有响尾蛇不要蜘蛛'."

汤姆还以为一个或两分钟，并说：

"这是个好主意。 我觉得它已经完成。 它必须已经完成;
它代表的原因。 是的，这是一个首要的好主意。 哪里你可以继续
了吗? "

"保留什么，火星汤姆? "

"为什么，响尾蛇."

"De天啊还活着，汤姆! 为什么，如果人家是一个
响尾蛇来唯一我会带连接的胸部适出thoo dat日志的墙上，我
将与我的头。"

为什么，吉姆，你不会怕这后一点。 你可以驯服
它的。"

"驯服它!"

"是的很容易。 每一种动物是感谢善良
抚摸，和他们不想伤害一个人的宠物。
任何一本书会告诉你。 你试试—这就是我所要求的；只是尝试对两个或
三天。 为什么，你可以得到他那么一小会儿，他会爱上你，
并与你的睡眠；以及不会离开你一分钟；会让
你把他包在你脖子上，把他的头在你的嘴。"

"请，汤姆—杜安的谈话这样的！ 我不可能STAN'它! 他想让
我把他的头在我mouf—fer一个忙，海恩吗? 我躺在他们等待一个
俘'ful长时间'为'我AST他。 En mo'en dat，我doan'要他
睡觉wid我。"

"吉姆，你不要那么愚蠢。 囚犯有某种
愚蠢的宠物，如果一条响尾蛇海恩不断被尝试，为什么，还有更多
的荣耀得到你是第一个曾经尝试它比任何其他方式
您可能想要挽救你的生命。"

"为什么，汤姆，我doan'不想的sich的荣耀。 蛇采取'n咬
吉姆的下巴了,den WHAH是德的荣耀吗? 不，蛛网，我杜安'不想的sich
做的。"

"怪它，你能不能试试吗? 我只想让你试试—你不必
让它起来，如果它不起作用。"

"但麻烦都做ef de蛇咬我，而我是一个想他。
汤姆，我是愿意为解决mos'任何'在不onreasonable，但
ef你哈克取一条响尾蛇在唯一对我驯服，我的gwyne要
离开，dat是上岸。"

"好吧，那么，就让它去，让它去，如果你这么牛头。 我们可以给你一些吊袜-蛇，你可以扎了一些按钮，在他们的尾巴，并让他们是响尾蛇，我认为必须做的。"

"我k'n'斯坦'数字高程模型，汤姆，但是怪"f I couldn'相处得非常之大，嗯，我告诉你dat。 我永远不会知道b'fo"t这么多麻烦，麻烦的是一个囚犯。"

"好吧，这总是被当做正确的。 你有任何老鼠周围在这里？"

"没有，蛛网，我hain不种子无"。

"好吧，我们会帮你的一些老鼠。"

"为什么，汤姆，我doan'希望没有老鼠。 德伊德dadblamedest creturs为'sturb体、连接沙沙圆钢'过'im,en咬他的脚，当时他试着睡觉，我没有看到。 不，蛛网，给我克'yarter-蛇,'f我得到了有'm，但doan'给我没有老鼠；我hain'没有得到使用f'r嗯，skasely."

"但是，吉姆，你得有他们—他们都这样做。 所以不要做任何更大惊小怪的。 囚犯是不是永远没有老鼠。 没有没有实例。 和他们训练他们，他们的宠物，并学习他们的技巧，以及他们得到尽可能善于交际为苍蝇。 但你要播放的音乐。你有什么玩音乐吗？"

"我也得到了nuffn但科斯梳en一块o'纸、连接一个的果汁竖琴，但我reck'n dey不采取任何股票在果汁-竖琴。"

"是的他们会的。 他们不在乎什么样的音乐tis. 一个犹太人的竖琴的大量足够好一只老鼠。 所有的动物都喜欢音乐—在监狱里，他们宠爱。 特别是，痛苦的音乐；并且你不能没有得到任何其他种类的一犹太人-竖琴。 它始终利益，他们；他们出来看看有什么事你。 是的，你是对的，你是固定的非常好。 你想要设置在你的床上晚你睡觉前，以及在早晨，并发挥你的犹太人-竖琴；'的最后一个链接被破坏'—这就是事情，'ll勺一只老鼠更快'n任何其他；而当你已经打了大约两分钟，你会看到所有的大鼠和蛇，蜘蛛，事情开始感到担心你而来。 和他们就会相当大群着你，并有一个高贵的好时机。"

"是的，他们会的，我reck'n'，汤姆，但是只母牛er时间是吉姆吃? 布莱斯特如果我的亲属见de品脱。 但是我会做的ef我得到了。 我reck恩我最好保持de动物的满足，不具有任何麻烦在德的房子。"

汤姆等认为，如果没有没有别的；以及
很快，他说：
"哦，还有一件事我忘了 你可以养花在这里，做你
看？"
"我doan知道但也许我可以，汤姆，但它tolable黑暗中
唯一的连接I ain'没有得到使用f找无花，无论如何,带她会是个战俘'ful
视o'麻烦。"
"好了，你试一试，无论如何。 其他一些囚犯已经做到了。"
"一个er dem大猫尾看mullen-秸秆会增长中的唯一,
汤姆，我reck'n'，但她不会脸红的一半de麻烦她
本院."
"你不相信它。 我们会给你一个小家伙和你的植物就在
拐角那边，并提高它。 并不叫马伦，呼吁它
Pitchiola—这是其正确的名称，当它在一个监狱。 和你想要
水与你的眼泪"。
"为什么，我得到了大量的泉水，火星汤姆。"
"你不想泉水，你想要水与您
眼泪。 这是他们总是这样。"
"为什么，汤姆，我躺在我的亲属提出一个er德国马克*马伦茎twyste
妇女参与发展的泉水的消遣另一个男人一个启动一个'N'妇女参与发展的眼泪"。
"这不是的想法。 你做了它的眼泪"。
"她会死在我的汉的，汤姆，她sholy会；加濑我doan'
skasely没有哭泣。"
因此，汤姆是难倒。 但是，他研究了它，然后说吉姆
会必担心沿着最好的他可以与一个洋葱。 他答应
他会去黑人小木屋和一，私人的，在吉姆的咖啡
壶，在早晨。 吉姆说他会"jis"s很快就会有tobacker在他的
咖啡"和发现了这么多错误，并与工作和麻烦的
提高慕兰和犹太人重弹老鼠，宠爱和讨人喜欢
的蛇，蜘蛛和东西，在顶的所有其他工作，他不得不
做笔，和碑文，并期刊，以及事情， 这使得它
更加困难，并担心和责任是一个囚犯，比任何东西
，他曾经承诺，汤姆大多数失去了所有的耐心他，并说他
只是loadened下更多的gaudier机会，比一个囚犯都
已经在世界上使自己的名字，但他不知道

足够欣赏他们，他们只是浪费在他身上。 所以，
吉姆，他很抱歉，并说，他不会表现得如此没有多个，然后我
和汤姆猛床。

第一章XXXIX

在早晨我们走到村庄和买了丝老鼠陷阱和
取下来，这意味着更多的最好的老鼠洞，并在大约一个小时我们
不得不十五的bulliest种人；以及然后我们把它，并把它放在一个
安全的地方在萨莉阿姨的床。 但是，虽然我们已经走了蜘蛛
小托马斯*富兰克林*本杰明*杰斐逊Elexander菲尔普斯发现了它
那里，打开门它看到，如果老鼠会出来，并且
他们没有；和萨莉阿姨她进来吧，和我们回来的时候她是一个
站在床上提高该隐和老鼠是做什么他们
可以保持沉闷的时间对于她。 所以她把和撒我们俩
与hickry，我们是多两个小时的捕另一个
十五岁或六岁，草，爱管闲事的幼崽，他们警告不
可能的，nuther，因为第一个途是挑选的羊群。 我从来没有
看到一个更有可能大量的老鼠比，第一个途。

我们有一个灿烂的股份排序的蜘蛛和昆虫和青蛙，和
毛毛虫，和一个事情或另一；而我们喜欢得到了一个马蜂窝，
但我们没有。 家庭是在家里。 我们没有得到它的权利，但是
留在他们只要我们可以的；因为我们允许我们的轮胎
他们或他们想要得到的轮胎我们出去，他们这样做。 然后，我们
allycumpain和擦在的地方，是非常近的所有权
，但不能设定下来的便利。 所以我们去了蛇，
并抓住了几十个吊袜带和房子-蛇，并把它们放在
一个袋，并把它放在我们的房间，那时是晚饭时间，并
剑拔弩张的良好诚实的当天的工作：和饿吗？ —哦，不，我不! 并
没有发出警告不幸福的蛇在那里当我们回去—我们没有
一半的领带被解雇，以及他们了不知怎的，离开了。 但它并没有
多大关系，因为他们仍然在房地的一个地方. 因此，我们
断定我们能找到他们中的一些。 没有，没有警告，没有真正的
稀缺蛇有关的房子相当大的咒语。 你会看到
他们的滴从椽和地方的每一个现在和以后；以及他们

generly降落在你的盘子或倒回你的脖子，并且大多数
时间里，你不想让他们。 嗯，他们英俊和
条纹的，并且有警告，没有伤害，在一百万的；但是，这从来
没有差到萨莉阿姨，她鄙视的蛇是什么品种
，他们可能，她无法忍受他们没有办法可以解决它；和
每次他们中的一个以失败告终在她的，它没有作任何
差她在做什么，她只是躺在那工作和
光。 我从来没有看到这样一个女人。 你可以听到她的呐喊到
杰里科。 你不能让她把a-霍尔特的一个他们用
钳子。 如果她转过来，并找到了一个在床她会扰
和举号啕大哭，你会觉得房子着火. 她
受到干扰的老男人所以他说，他最希望有没有
没有没有蛇创建的。 为什么，经过每一个蛇已经
清除了房子多一周，萨莉阿姨警告，不过它
还没有，她警告不附近；当她设想
的东西，你可以摸摸她的在她的脖子后面有羽绒和
她会跳出她的长袜。 这是非常奇怪的。 但是汤姆
说所有妇女都是如此。 他说，他们是由这种方式对于一些
原因或其他。

我们得到了一个舔每次我们的蛇来在她的方式，和
她允许这些lickings警告没有什么为什么她会做如果我们
没有载入的地方再次与他们。 我不介意的lickings,
因为他们没有量没有，但我志同道合的麻烦我们有
放在另一个场。 但我们得到了它们规定，和所有其他的事情；以及
你永远看不到一个小屋作为blithesome为吉姆的时候他们会的所有群
出音乐的，去他的。 吉姆不喜欢蜘蛛，蜘蛛
没有像吉姆；以及使他们会放他，并使其强大的温暖
他。 他说之间的大鼠和蛇和磨石
有警告，没有房间在床上他，skasely；以及当有物、
身体睡不着觉，它是如此活泼，并且它始终是热闹的，他说，
因为他们从来没有睡在一段时间，但把有关，所以当
蛇睡着了，老鼠是在甲板上，在老鼠把
蛇来看， 所以他总是有一个团伙在他之下，在他的
方式，和t'other团伙具有一个马戏团了他，如果他起来了追捕一个
新的地方蜘蛛会采取一个机会，在他交叉。 他

说如果他得到了这个时候他不会永远是一个囚犯同样，没有一个工资。

好了，结束为期三周的一切都是在非常良好的状态。这件衬衫是发给在早期，在一个饼，每次一只老鼠位的吉姆他就会起来写点在他的日记，虽然墨新鲜；这笔是，铭文等是所有雕刻的磨石；床腿是啥样在两个，我们不得不等上的木屑，它给我们一个大惊人的胃疼。 我们估计我们都会死，但没有。 这是最undigestible木屑我见；和汤姆所述的相同。 但是，正如我说的，我们得到了所有的工作现在，最后，我们都很累了，太多，但主要是吉姆。 老人已经写了几次到的种植下奥尔良来并得到他们的逃亡的黑奴，但没有得到任何答复，因为没有警告不没有这种种植园，所以他允许，他将宣传吉姆在圣路易斯和新奥尔良的论文；以及当他提到了圣路易斯的那个也给我冷不寒而栗，并且我看到我们没有失去的时间。 因此，汤姆说，现在的nonnamous字母。

"什么？ " 我所说的。

"警告人的东西了。 有时候这样做一种方式，有时另一个。 但是总是有人监视那发出通知到州长的城堡。 当路易十六。要亮出来的Tooleries一个仆人-女孩这样做。 这是一个非常好的方式，因此是nonnamous字母。 我们将使用他们两个。 它通常用于囚犯的母亲去换衣服了他，她在和他的幻灯片在她的衣服。 我们将做到这一点。"

"但是听我说，汤姆，我们该怎么想警告任何人，有什么事？ 让他们找到它自己的—这是他们的监视。"

"是的，我知道；但是你不可能取决于他们。 它的方式他们已经采取行动从一开始—留给我们做的一切。 他们所以倾诉和乌鱼头他们不会注意什么都没有。 所以如果我们不给他们，通知将不会有没有人也没有什么可干扰我们，并因此在我们的所有辛勤工作和麻烦这是逃脱'll go off完全平；是不会额为什么—不是没什么。"

"嗯，对我来说，汤姆，这是我的想象。"

"胡说!"他说，看了反感。 所以我说:

"但我是不会作任何投诉。 任何方法适合你
适合我。 你打算怎么做仆人-女孩？ "

"你就会是她的。 你滑，在半夜，并钩，
黄色的女孩的上衣."

"为什么，汤姆，那会惹麻烦二天早上；因为，当然，
她prob'bly海恩不会得到任何但是那一个。"

"我知道，但你不想要它却十五分钟，随身携带的
nonnamous信和推它在前门。"

"所有权，然后，我会做到这一点；但我可以带着它只是为方便在我
自己的服."

"你看起来不像一个仆人-女孩然后，你会吗？ "

"没有，但是没有没有人看到我看起来像什么，反正。"

"这不是什么都没有做。 事情对于我们要做的就是
做我们的责任，而不必担心是否有任何人看见我们这样做或者
没有。 海恩你没有得到任何原则在所有？ "

"好吧，我没说什么，我的仆人-女孩。 谁是吉姆的
母亲？ "

"我是他的母亲。 我会一个礼服从萨莉阿姨."

"好吧，那么，你必须留在舱的时候我和吉姆
叶。"

"不多。 我会的东西，吉姆的衣服满的稻草和躺在自己的床上
表示他的母亲在伪装，Jim'll采取的黑人女人的
礼服，我和穿上它，我们都逃避在一起。 当
囚犯的逃逸的风格这就是所谓的逃税行为。 它总是叫因此
当一个国王的逃脱、f'rinstance. 和同样一个国王的儿子；它
不作任何区别，他是否是一个自然的或非自然
的。"

因此，汤姆他写的nonnamous信，我smouched的黄色
的丫头的衣服那天晚上，穿上它，并把它在前
门，汤姆告诉我。 它说：

当心。 麻烦正在酝酿之中。 保持锐利的瞭望台。

未知的朋友

接下来的夜晚我们把一个画面,汤姆就在血，头骨和腿骨，在前门；以及第二天晚上的另一个棺材上的后门。 我从来没有看到一个家庭在这样一身汗。 他们不能一直害怕更糟如果地方有一个已经全部的鬼铺设对他们的背后的一切，并在床和发抖通过空气。 如果一个门撞，萨莉阿姨她跳说"哎哟！"如果任何下跌，她跳下来说"哎哟！"如果你发生了摸她时，她警告不注意到，她所做的一样；她不能面对不是吧，是满意的，因为她允许有一些在她身后的每个时间—所以她总是一-周围的回旋突然说"哎哟，"之前，她得到了三分之二左右，她想旋转后再返回，并说它再次和她是害怕去上床，但她达森不成立。 这样的事情是工作得很好，汤姆说；他说，他永远看不到事情的工作更加令人满意的。 他说，这表明这样做是正确的。

所以他说，现在大胀! 所以第二天早上在本条纹的曙光，我们有另一个字母的准备，并且想知道什么我们最好用它做，因为我们听到他们说吃晚饭他们会有一个黑鬼在看着两扇门所有的夜晚。 汤姆他去了闪电-棒的间谍；和黑奴后门是睡着了，他坚持它在他的脖子后面回来。 这封信说：

不要背叛我，我希望是你的朋友。 有一个desprate团伙的切割喉自在印度领土要偷你的逃亡黑人夜，他们一直在试图吓唬你以为你将留在家里并不打扰他们。 我是一个帮派，但是已经得到了religgion，并希望退出，并导致一个诚实的生活一次，并将背叛的helish设计。 他们会偷偷溜下来，从northards，沿着围栏，在午夜的精确，用一个虚假的关键，并在这黑鬼的小屋得到他。 我要一张和打击锡喇叭如果我看到任何危险；但代之而起的，我会BA像一只羊只要他们得到在并不是打击所有人；然后，而他们是得到他的链子松，你溜有和锁定他们，并且可以杀死他们在你的休闲. 不要做任何事情，但只是这种方式，我告诉你，如果你做他们会怀疑的东西，并提出呐喊jamboreehoo. 我不希望任何报酬，但要知道我已经做正确的事情。

未知的朋友。

第一章XL

我们感觉很好早餐之后，把我的独木舟去
河上的一个捕鱼，有一个午餐，并有一个很好的时间，并采取了一个
看着木筏和找到她的所有权利，并得到了回家迟到的晚餐，并
发现他们在这样的汗水和担心他们不知道他们
是站上，并提出了我们走马上到床上我们做
晚饭， 并不会告诉我们什么麻烦的是，从来没有让一个
单词有关的新的信函，但没有必要，因为我们知道作为
多少关于为任何人都没有，只要我们一半以上楼梯，
她转身时我们下滑的地窖柜子里装了一个良好的
午餐，并把它带到我们的房间，上床睡觉，并得到了大约半
，过去十一， 汤姆把萨莉阿姨的衣服，他偷走了而是
要开始带的午餐，但是他说:

"是黄油吗？"
"我提出了一个大块头的，"我说，"在一片玉米手机."
"好吧，你离开了，然后—它不是在这里"。
"我们可以得到没有它的，"我说。
"我们可以得到沿用，也是，"他说，"只是你滑下

地窖和取回它。 然后莫西右边的避雷针以及
来。 我会去的东西草入吉姆的衣服来表示他的
母亲在伪装，并随时准备BA像一只羊，并推旦
你到达那里。"

So out he went, and down cellar went I. The hunk of butter, big as a person’s fist, was where I had left it, so I took up the slab of corn-pone with it on, and blowed out my light, and started up stairs very stealthy, and got up to the main floor all right, but here comes Aunt Sally with a candle, and I clapped the truck in my hat, and clapped my hat on my head, and the next second she see me; and she says:

“You been down cellar?”
“Yes’m.”
“What you been doing down there?”

"Noth'n."

"NOTH'N!"

"No'm."

"Well, then, what possessed you to go down there this time of night?"

"I don't know 'm."

"You don't KNOW? Don't answer me that way. Tom, I want to know what you been DOING down there."

"I hain't been doing a single thing, Aunt Sally, I hope to gracious if I have."

I reckoned she'd let me go now, and as a generl thing she would; but I s'pose there was so many strange things going on she was just in a sweat about every little thing that warn't yard-stick straight; so she says, very decided:

"You just march into that setting-room and stay there till I come. You been up to something you no business to, and I lay I'll find out what it is before I'M done with you."

So she went away as I opened the door and walked into the setting-room. My, but there was a crowd there! Fifteen farmers, and every one of them had a gun. I was most powerful sick, and slunk to a chair and set down. They was setting around, some of them talking a little, in a low voice, and all of them fidgety and uneasy, but trying to look like they warn't; but I knowed they was, because they was always taking off their hats, and putting them on, and scratching their heads, and changing their seats, and fumbling with their buttons. I warn't easy myself, but I didn't take my hat off, all the same.

I did wish Aunt Sally would come, and get done with me, and lick me, if she wanted to, and let me get away and tell Tom how we'd overdone this thing, and what a thundering hornet's-nest we'd got ourselves into, so we could stop fooling around straight off, and clear out with Jim before these rips got out of patience and come for us.

At last she come and begun to ask me questions, but I COULDN'T answer them straight, I didn't know which end of me was up; because these men was in such a fidget now that some was wanting to start right NOW and lay for them desperadoes, and saying it warn't but a few

minutes to midnight; and others was trying to get them to hold on and wait for the sheep-signal; and here was Aunty pegging away at the questions, and me a-shaking all over and ready to sink down in my tracks I was that scared; and the place getting hotter and hotter, and the butter beginning to melt and run down my neck and behind my ears; and pretty soon, when one of them says, "I'M for going and getting in the cabin FIRST and right NOW, and catching them when they come," I most dropped; and a streak of butter come a-trickling down my forehead, and Aunt Sally she see it, and turns white as a sheet, and says:

"For the land's sake, what IS the matter with the child? He's got the brain-fever as shore as you're born, and they're oozing out!"

And everybody runs to see, and she snatches off my hat, and out comes the bread and what was left of the butter, and she grabbed me, and hugged me, and says:

"Oh, what a turn you did give me! and how glad and grateful I am it ain't no worse; for luck's against us, and it never rains but it pours, and when I see that truck I thought we'd lost you, for I knowed by the color and all it was just like your brains would be if—Dear, dear, whyd'nt you TELL me that was what you'd been down there for, I wouldn't a cared. Now cler out to bed, and don't lemme see no more of you till morning!"

I was up stairs in a second, and down the lightning-rod in another one, and shinning through the dark for the lean-to. I couldn't hardly get my words out, I was so anxious; but I told Tom as quick as I could we must jump for it now, and not a minute to lose—the house full of men, yonder, with guns!

His eyes just blazed; and he says:

"No!—is that so? AIN'T it bully! Why, Huck, if it was to do over again, I bet I could fetch two hundred! If we could put it off till—"

"Hurry! HURRY!" I says. "Where's Jim?"

"Right at your elbow; if you reach out your arm you can touch him. He's dressed, and everything's ready. Now we'll slide out and give the sheep-signal."

But then we heard the tramp of men coming to the door, and heard them begin to fumble with the pad-lock, and heard a man say:

“I TOLD you we’d be too soon; they haven’t come—the door is locked. Here, I’ll lock some of you into the cabin, and you lay for ‘em in the dark and kill ‘em when they come; and the rest scatter around a piece, and listen if you can hear ‘em coming.”

So in they come, but couldn’t see us in the dark, and most trod on us whilst we was hustling to get under the bed. But we got under all right, and out through the hole, swift but soft—Jim first, me next, and Tom last, which was according to Tom’s orders. Now we was in the lean-to, and heard trampings close by outside. So we crept to the door, and Tom stopped us there and put his eye to the crack, but couldn’t make out nothing, it was so dark; and whispered and said he would listen for the steps to get further, and when he nudged us Jim must glide out first, and him last. So he set his ear to the crack and listened, and listened, and listened, and the steps a-scraping around out there all the time; and at last he nudged us, and we slid out, and stooped down, not breathing, and not making the least noise, and slipped stealthy towards the fence in Injun file, and got to it all right, and me and Jim over it; but Tom’s britches catched fast on a splinter on the top rail, and then he hear the steps coming, so he had to pull loose, which snapped the splinter and made a noise; and as he dropped in our tracks and started somebody sings out:

“Who’s that? Answer, or I’ll shoot!”

But we didn’t answer; we just unfurled our heels and shoved. Then there was a rush, and a BANG, BANG, BANG! and the bullets fairly whizzed around us! We heard them sing out:

“Here they are! They’ve broke for the river! After ‘em, boys, and turn loose the dogs!”

So here they come, full tilt. We could hear them because they wore boots and yelled, but we didn’t wear no boots and didn’t yell. We was in the path to the mill; and when they got pretty close on to us we dodged into the bush and let them go by, and then dropped in behind them. They’d had all the dogs shut up, so they wouldn’t scare off the robbers; but by this time somebody had let them loose, and here they come, making powwow enough for a million; but they was our dogs; so we stopped in our tracks till they catched up; and when they see it warn’t nobody but us, and no excitement to offer them, they only just said

howdy, and tore right ahead towards the shouting and clattering; and then we up-steam again, and whizzed along after them till we was nearly to the mill, and then struck up through the bush to where my canoe was tied, and hopped in and pulled for dear life towards the middle of the river, but didn't make no more noise than we was obleeged to. Then we struck out, easy and comfortable, for the island where my raft was; and we could hear them yelling and barking at each other all up and down the bank, till we was so far away the sounds got dim and died out. And when we stepped on to the raft I says:

"NOW, old Jim, you're a free man again, and I bet you won't ever be a slave no more."

"En a mighty good job it wuz, too, Huck. It 'uz planned beautiful, en it 'uz done beautiful; en dey ain't NOBODY kin git up a plan dat's mo' mixed-up en splendid den what dat one wuz."

We was all glad as we could be, but Tom was the gladdest of all because he had a bullet in the calf of his leg.

When me and Jim heard that we didn't feel so brash as what we did before. It was hurting him considerable, and bleeding; so we laid him in the wigwam and tore up one of the duke's shirts for to bandage him, but he says:

"Gimme the rags; I can do it myself. Don't stop now; don't fool around here, and the evasion booming along so handsome; man the sweeps, and set her loose! Boys, we done it elegant!—'deed we did. I wish WE'D a had the handling of Louis XVI., there wouldn't a been no 'Son of Saint Louis, ascend to heaven!' wrote down in HIS biography; no, sir, we'd a whooped him over the BORDER—that's what we'd a done with HIM—and done it just as slick as nothing at all, too. Man the sweeps—man the sweeps!"

But me and Jim was consulting—and thinking. And after we'd thought a minute, I says:

"Say it, Jim."

So he says:

"Well, den, dis is de way it look to me, Huck. Ef it wuz HIM dat 'uz bein' sot free, en one er de boys wuz to git shot, would he say, 'Go on en save me, nemmine 'bout a doctor f'r to save dis one?' Is dat like Mars

Tom Sawyer? Would he say dat? You BET he wouldn't! WELL, den, is JIM gywne to say it? No, sah—I doan' budge a step out'n dis place 'dout a DOCTOR, not if it's forty year!"

I knowed he was white inside, and I reckoned he'd say what he did say—so it was all right now, and I told Tom I was a-going for a doctor. He raised considerable row about it, but me and Jim stuck to it and wouldn't budge; so he was for crawling out and setting the raft loose himself; but we wouldn't let him. Then he give us a piece of his mind, but it didn't do no good.

So when he sees me getting the canoe ready, he says:

"Well, then, if you re bound to go, I'll tell you the way to do when you get to the village. Shut the door and blindfold the doctor tight and fast, and make him swear to be silent as the grave, and put a purse full of gold in his hand, and then take and lead him all around the back alleys and everywheres in the dark, and then fetch him here in the canoe, in a roundabout way amongst the islands, and search him and take his chalk away from him, and don't give it back to him till you get him back to the village, or else he will chalk this raft so he can find it again. It's the way they all do."

So I said I would, and left, and Jim was to hide in the woods when he see the doctor coming till he was gone again.

Chapter XLI

THE doctor was an old man; a very nice, kind-looking old man when I got him up. I told him me and my brother was over on Spanish Island hunting yesterday afternoon, and camped on a piece of a raft we found, and about midnight he must a kicked his gun in his dreams, for it went off and shot him in the leg, and we wanted him to go over there and fix it and not say nothing about it, nor let anybody know, because we wanted to come home this evening and surprise the folks.

"Who is your folks?" he says.

"The Phelpses, down yonder."

"Oh," he says. And after a minute, he says:

"How'd you say he got shot?"

“He had a dream,” I says, “and it shot him.”

“Singular dream,” he says.

So he lit up his lantern, and got his saddle-bags, and we started. But when he sees the canoe he didn’t like the look of her—said she was big enough for one, but didn’t look pretty safe for two. I says:

“Oh, you needn’t be afeard, sir, she carried the three of us easy enough.”

“What three?”

“Why, me and Sid, and—and—and THE GUNS; that’s what I mean.”

“Oh,” he says.

But he put his foot on the gunnel and rocked her, and shook his head, and said he reckoned he’d look around for a bigger one. But they was all locked and chained; so he took my canoe, and said for me to wait till he come back, or I could hunt around further, or maybe I better go down home and get them ready for the surprise if I wanted to. But I said I didn’t; so I told him just how to find the raft, and then he started.

I struck an idea pretty soon. I says to myself, spos’n he can’t fix that leg just in three shakes of a sheep’s tail, as the saying is? spos’n it takes him three or four days? What are we going to do?—lay around there till he lets the cat out of the bag? No, sir; I know what I’LL do. I’ll wait, and when he comes back if he says he’s got to go any more I’ll get down there, too, if I swim; and we’ll take and tie him, and keep him, and shove out down the river; and when Tom’s done with him we’ll give him what it’s worth, or all we got, and then let him get ashore.

So then I crept into a lumber-pile to get some sleep; and next time I waked up the sun was away up over my head! I shot out and went for the doctor’s house, but they told me he’d gone away in the night some time or other, and warn’t back yet. Well, thinks I, that looks powerful bad for Tom, and I’ll dig out for the island right off. So away I shoved, and turned the corner, and nearly rammed my head into Uncle Silas’s stomach! He says:

“Why, TOM! Where you been all this time, you rascal?”

“I hain’t been nowheres,” I says, “only just hunting for the runaway nigger—me and Sid.”

"Why, where ever did you go?" he says. "Your aunt's been mighty uneasy."

"She needn't," I says, "because we was all right. We followed the men and the dogs, but they outrun us, and we lost them; but we thought we heard them on the water, so we got a canoe and took out after them and crossed over, but couldn't find nothing of them; so we cruised along up-shore till we got kind of tired and beat out; and tied up the canoe and went to sleep, and never waked up till about an hour ago; then we paddled over here to hear the news, and Sid's at the post-office to see what he can hear, and I'm a-branching out to get something to eat for us, and then we're going home."

So then we went to the post-office to get "Sid"; but just as I suspicioned, he warn't there; so the old man he got a letter out of the office, and we waited awhile longer, but Sid didn't come; so the old man said, come along, let Sid foot it home, or canoe it, when he got done fooling around—but we would ride. I couldn't get him to let me stay and wait for Sid; and he said there warn't no use in it, and I must come along, and let Aunt Sally see we was all right.

When we got home Aunt Sally was that glad to see me she laughed and cried both, and hugged me, and give me one of them lickings of hern that don't amount to shucks, and said she'd serve Sid the same when he come.

And the place was plum full of farmers and farmers' wives, to dinner; and such another clack a body never heard. Old Mrs. Hotchkiss was the worst; her tongue was a-going all the time. She says:

"Well, Sister Phelps, I've ransacked that-air cabin over, an' I b'lieve the nigger was crazy. I says to Sister Damrell—didn't I, Sister Damrell?—s'I, he's crazy, s'I—them's the very words I said. You all hearn me: he's crazy, s'I; everything shows it, s'I. Look at that-air grindstone, s'I; want to tell ME't any cretur 't's in his right mind 's a goin' to scrabble all them crazy things onto a grindstone, s'I? Here sich 'n' sich a person busted his heart; 'n' here so 'n' so pegged along for thirty-seven year, 'n' all that—natcherl son o' Louis somebody, 'n' sich everlast'n rubbage. He's plumb crazy, s'I; it's what I says in the fust

place, it's what I says in the middle, 'n' it's what I says last 'n' all the time—the nigger's crazy—crazy 's Nebokoodneezer, s'I."

"An' look at that-air ladder made out'n rags, Sister Hotchkiss," says old Mrs. Damrell; "what in the name o' goodness COULD he ever want of—"

"The very words I was a-sayin' no longer ago th'n this minute to Sister Utterback, 'n' she'll tell you so herself. Sh-she, look at that-air rag ladder, sh-she; 'n' s'I, yes, LOOK at it, s'I—what COULD he a-wanted of it, s'I. Sh-she, Sister Hotchkiss, sh-she—"

"But how in the nation'd they ever GIT that grindstone IN there, ANYWAY? 'n' who dug that-air HOLE? 'n' who—"

"My very WORDS, Brer Penrod! I was a-sayin'—pass that-air sasser o' m'lasses, won't ye?—I was a-sayin' to Sister Dunlap, jist this minute, how DID they git that grindstone in there, s'I. Without HELP, mind you—'thout HELP! THAT'S wher 'tis. Don't tell ME, s'I; there WUZ help, s'I; 'n' ther' wuz a PLENTY help, too, s'I; ther's ben a DOZEN a-helpin' that nigger, 'n' I lay I'd skin every last nigger on this place but I'D find out who done it, s'I; 'n' moreover, s'I—"

"A DOZEN says you!—FORTY couldn't a done every thing that's been done. Look at them case-knife saws and things, how tedious they've been made; look at that bed-leg sawed off with 'm, a week's work for six men; look at that nigger made out'n straw on the bed; and look at—"

"You may WELL say it, Brer Hightower! It's jist as I was a-sayin' to Brer Phelps, his own self. S'e, what do YOU think of it, Sister Hotchkiss, s'e? Think o' what, Brer Phelps, s'I? Think o' that bed-leg sawed off that a way, s'e? THINK of it, s'I? I lay it never sawed ITSELF off, s'I—somebody SAWED it, s'I; that's my opinion, take it or leave it, it mayn't be no 'count, s'I, but sich as 't is, it's my opinion, s'I, 'n' if any body k'n start a better one, s'I, let him DO it, s'I, that's all. I says to Sister Dunlap, s'I—"

"Why, dog my cats, they must a ben a house-full o' niggers in there every night for four weeks to a done all that work, Sister Phelps. Look at that shirt—every last inch of it kivered over with secret African writ'n done with blood! Must a ben a raft uv 'm at it right along, all the time,

amost. Why, I'd give two dollars to have it read to me; 'n' as for the niggers that wrote it, I 'low I'd take 'n' lash 'm t'll—"

"People to HELP him, Brother Marples! Well, I reckon you'd THINK so if you'd a been in this house for a while back. Why, they've stole everything they could lay their hands on—and we a-watching all the time, mind you. They stole that shirt right off o' the line! and as for that sheet they made the rag ladder out of, ther' ain't no telling how many times they DIDN'T steal that; and flour, and candles, and candlesticks, and spoons, and the old warming-pan, and most a thousand things that I disremember now, and my new calico dress; and me and Silas and my Sid and Tom on the constant watch day AND night, as I was a-telling you, and not a one of us could catch hide nor hair nor sight nor sound of them; and here at the last minute, lo and behold you, they slides right in under our noses and fools us, and not only fools US but the Injun Territory robbers too, and actuly gets AWAY with that nigger safe and sound, and that with sixteen men and twenty-two dogs right on their very heels at that very time! I tell you, it just bangs anything I ever HEARD of. Why, SPERITS couldn't a done better and been no smarter. And I reckon they must a BEEN sperits—because, YOU know our dogs, and ther' ain't no better; well, them dogs never even got on the TRACK of 'm once! You explain THAT to me if you can!—ANY of you!"

"Well, it does beat—"

"Laws alive, I never—"

"So help me, I wouldn't a be—"

"HOUSE-thieves as well as—"

"Goodnessgracioussakes, I'd a ben afeard to live in sich a—"

"'Fraid to LIVE!—why, I was that scared I dasn't hardly go to bed, or get up, or lay down, or SET down, Sister Ridgeway. Why, they'd steal the very—why, goodness sakes, you can guess what kind of a fluster I was in by the time midnight come last night. I hope to gracious if I warn't afraid they'd steal some o' the family! I was just to that pass I didn't have no reasoning faculties no more. It looks foolish enough NOW, in the daytime; but I says to myself, there's my two poor boys asleep, 'way up stairs in that lonesome room, and I declare to goodness I was that uneasy 't I crep' up there and locked 'em in! I DID. And

anybody would. Because, you know, when you get scared that way, and it keeps running on, and getting worse and worse all the time, and your wits gets to addling, and you get to doing all sorts o' wild things, and by and by you think to yourself, spos'n I was a boy, and was away up there, and the door ain't locked, and you—" She stopped, looking kind of wondering, and then she turned her head around slow, and when her eye lit on me—I got up and took a walk.

Says I to myself, I can explain better how we come to not be in that room this morning if I go out to one side and study over it a little. So I done it. But I dasn't go fur, or she'd a sent for me. And when it was late in the day the people all went, and then I come in and told her the noise and shooting waked up me and "Sid," and the door was locked, and we wanted to see the fun, so we went down the lightning-rod, and both of us got hurt a little, and we didn't never want to try THAT no more. And then I went on and told her all what I told Uncle Silas before; and then she said she'd forgive us, and maybe it was all right enough anyway, and about what a body might expect of boys, for all boys was a pretty harum-scarum lot as fur as she could see; and so, as long as no harm hadn't come of it, she judged she better put in her time being grateful we was alive and well and she had us still, stead of fretting over what was past and done. So then she kissed me, and patted me on the head, and dropped into a kind of a brown study; and pretty soon jumps up, and says:

"Why, lawsamercy, it's most night, and Sid not come yet! What HAS become of that boy?"

I see my chance; so I skips up and says:

"I'll run right up to town and get him," I says.

"No you won't," she says. "You'll stay right wher' you are; ONE'S enough to be lost at a time. If he ain't here to supper, your uncle 'll go."

Well, he warn't there to supper; so right after supper uncle went.

He come back about ten a little bit uneasy; hadn't run across Tom's track. Aunt Sally was a good DEAL uneasy; but Uncle Silas he said there warn't no occasion to be—boys will be boys, he said, and you'll see this one turn up in the morning all sound and right. So she had to be satisfied. But she said she'd set up for him a while anyway, and keep a light burning so he could see it.

And then when I went up to bed she come up with me and fetched her candle, and tucked me in, and mothered me so good I felt mean, and like I couldn't look her in the face; and she set down on the bed and talked with me a long time, and said what a splendid boy Sid was, and didn't seem to want to ever stop talking about him; and kept asking me every now and then if I reckoned he could a got lost, or hurt, or maybe drownded, and might be laying at this minute somewheres suffering or dead, and she not by him to help him, and so the tears would drip down silent, and I would tell her that Sid was all right, and would be home in the morning, sure; and she would squeeze my hand, or maybe kiss me, and tell me to say it again, and keep on saying it, because it done her good, and she was in so much trouble. And when she was going away she looked down in my eyes so steady and gentle, and says:

"The door ain't going to be locked, Tom, and there's the window and the rod; but you'll be good, WON'T you? And you won't go? For MY sake."

Laws knows I WANTED to go bad enough to see about Tom, and was all intending to go; but after that I wouldn't a went, not for kingdoms.

But she was on my mind and Tom was on my mind, so I slept very restless. And twice I went down the rod away in the night, and slipped around front, and see her setting there by her candle in the window with her eyes towards the road and the tears in them; and I wished I could do something for her, but I couldn't, only to swear that I wouldn't never do nothing to grieve her any more. And the third time I waked up at dawn, and slid down, and she was there yet, and her candle was most out, and her old gray head was resting on her hand, and she was asleep.

Chapter XLII

THE old man was uptown again before breakfast, but couldn't get no track of Tom; and both of them set at the table thinking, and not saying nothing, and looking mournful, and their coffee getting cold, and not eating anything. And by and by the old man says:

"Did I give you the letter?"

"What letter?"

"The one I got yesterday out of the post-office."

"No, you didn't give me no letter."

"Well, I must a forgot it."

So he rummaged his pockets, and then went off somewheres where he had laid it down, and fetched it, and give it to her. She says:

"Why, it's from St. Petersburg—it's from Sis."

I allowed another walk would do me good; but I couldn't stir. But before she could break it open she dropped it and run—for she see something. And so did I. It was Tom Sawyer on a mattress; and that old doctor; and Jim, in HER calico dress, with his hands tied behind him; and a lot of people. I hid the letter behind the first thing that come handy, and rushed. She flung herself at Tom, crying, and says:

"Oh, he's dead, he's dead, I know he's dead!"

And Tom he turned his head a little, and muttered something or other, which showed he warn't in his right mind; then she flung up her hands, and says:

"He's alive, thank God! And that's enough!" and she snatched a kiss of him, and flew for the house to get the bed ready, and scattering orders right and left at the niggers and everybody else, as fast as her tongue could go, every jump of the way.

I followed the men to see what they was going to do with Jim; and the old doctor and Uncle Silas followed after Tom into the house. The men was very huffy, and some of them wanted to hang Jim for an example to all the other niggers around there, so they wouldn't be trying to run away like Jim done, and making such a raft of trouble, and keeping a whole family scared most to death for days and nights. But the others said, don't do it, it wouldn't answer at all; he ain't our nigger, and his owner would turn up and make us pay for him, sure. So that cooled them down a little, because the people that's always the most anxious for to hang a nigger that hain't done just right is always the very ones that ain't the most anxious to pay for him when they've got their satisfaction out of him.

They cussed Jim considerble, though, and give him a cuff or two side the head once in a while, but Jim never said nothing, and he never let on

to know me, and they took him to the same cabin, and put his own clothes on him, and chained him again, and not to no bed-leg this time, but to a big staple drove into the bottom log, and chained his hands, too, and both legs, and said he warn't to have nothing but bread and water to eat after this till his owner come, or he was sold at auction because he didn't come in a certain length of time, and filled up our hole, and said a couple of farmers with guns must stand watch around about the cabin every night, and a bulldog tied to the door in the daytime; and about this time they was through with the job and was tapering off with a kind of generl good-bye cussing, and then the old doctor comes and takes a look, and says:

"Don't be no rougher on him than you're obleeged to, because he ain't a bad nigger. When I got to where I found the boy I see I couldn't cut the bullet out without some help, and he warn't in no condition for me to leave to go and get help; and he got a little worse and a little worse, and after a long time he went out of his head, and wouldn't let me come a-nigh him any more, and said if I chalked his raft he'd kill me, and no end of wild foolishness like that, and I see I couldn't do anything at all with him; so I says, I got to have HELP somehow; and the minute I says it out crawls this nigger from somewheres and says he'll help, and he done it, too, and done it very well. Of course I judged he must be a runaway nigger, and there I WAS! and there I had to stick right straight along all the rest of the day and all night. It was a fix, I tell you! I had a couple of patients with the chills, and of course I'd of liked to run up to town and see them, but I dasn't, because the nigger might get away, and then I'd be to blame; and yet never a skiff come close enough for me to hail. So there I had to stick plumb until daylight this morning; and I never see a nigger that was a better nuss or faithfuller, and yet he was risking his freedom to do it, and was all tired out, too, and I see plain enough he'd been worked main hard lately. I liked the nigger for that; I tell you, gentlemen, a nigger like that is worth a thousand dollars—and kind treatment, too. I had everything I needed, and the boy was doing as well there as he would a done at home—better, maybe, because it was so quiet; but there I WAS, with both of 'm on my hands, and there I had to stick till about dawn this morning; then some men in a skiff come by,

and as good luck would have it the nigger was setting by the pallet with his head propped on his knees sound asleep; so I motioned them in quiet, and they slipped up on him and grabbed him and tied him before he knowed what he was about, and we never had no trouble. And the boy being in a kind of a flighty sleep, too, we muffled the oars and hitched the raft on, and towed her over very nice and quiet, and the nigger never made the least row nor said a word from the start. He ain't no bad nigger, gentlemen; that's what I think about him."

Somebody says:

"Well, it sounds very good, doctor, I'm obleeged to say."

Then the others softened up a little, too, and I was mighty thankful to that old doctor for doing Jim that good turn; and I was glad it was according to my judgment of him, too; because I thought he had a good heart in him and was a good man the first time I see him. Then they all agreed that Jim had acted very well, and was deserving to have some notice took of it, and reward. So every one of them promised, right out and hearty, that they wouldn't cuss him no more.

Then they come out and locked him up. I hoped they was going to say he could have one or two of the chains took off, because they was rotten heavy, or could have meat and greens with his bread and water; but they didn't think of it, and I reckoned it warn't best for me to mix in, but I judged I'd get the doctor's yarn to Aunt Sally somehow or other as soon as I'd got through the breakers that was laying just ahead of me — explanations, I mean, of how I forgot to mention about Sid being shot when I was telling how him and me put in that dratted night paddling around hunting the runaway nigger.

But I had plenty time. Aunt Sally she stuck to the sick-room all day and all night, and every time I see Uncle Silas mooning around I dodged him.

Next morning I heard Tom was a good deal better, and they said Aunt Sally was gone to get a nap. So I slips to the sick-room, and if I found him awake I reckoned we could put up a yarn for the family that would wash. But he was sleeping, and sleeping very peaceful, too; and pale, not fire-faced the way he was when he come. So I set down and laid for him to wake. In about half an hour Aunt Sally comes gliding in, and

there I was, up a stump again! She motioned me to be still, and set down by me, and begun to whisper, and said we could all be joyful now, because all the symptoms was first-rate, and he'd been sleeping like that for ever so long, and looking better and peacefuller all the time, and ten to one he'd wake up in his right mind.

So we set there watching, and by and by he stirs a bit, and opened his eyes very natural, and takes a look, and says:

"Hello!—why, I'm at HOME! How's that? Where's the raft?"

"It's all right," I says.

"And JIM?"

"The same," I says, but couldn't say it pretty brash. But he never noticed, but says:

"Good! Splendid! NOW we're all right and safe! Did you tell Aunty?"

I was going to say yes; but she chipped in and says: "About what, Sid?"

"Why, about the way the whole thing was done."

"What whole thing?"

"Why, THE whole thing. There ain't but one; how we set the runaway nigger free—me and Tom."

"Good land! Set the run—What IS the child talking about! Dear, dear, out of his head again!"

"NO, I ain't out of my HEAD; I know all what I'm talking about. We DID set him free—me and Tom. We laid out to do it, and we DONE it. And we done it elegant, too." He'd got a start, and she never checked him up, just set and stared and stared, and let him clip along, and I see it warn't no use for ME to put in. "Why, Aunty, it cost us a power of work —weeks of it—hours and hours, every night, whilst you was all asleep. And we had to steal candles, and the sheet, and the shirt, and your dress, and spoons, and tin plates, and case-knives, and the warming-pan, and the grindstone, and flour, and just no end of things, and you can't think what work it was to make the saws, and pens, and inscriptions, and one thing or another, and you can't think HALF the fun it was. And we had to make up the pictures of coffins and things, and nonnamous letters from the robbers, and get up and down the lightning-rod, and dig the hole

into the cabin, and made the rope ladder and send it in cooked up in a pie, and send in spoons and things to work with in your apron pocket—"

"Mercy sakes!"

"—and load up the cabin with rats and snakes and so on, for company for Jim; and then you kept Tom here so long with the butter in his hat that you come near spiling the whole business, because the men come before we was out of the cabin, and we had to rush, and they heard us and let drive at us, and I got my share, and we dodged out of the path and let them go by, and when the dogs come they warn't interested in us, but went for the most noise, and we got our canoe, and made for the raft, and was all safe, and Jim was a free man, and we done it all by ourselves, and WASN'T it bully, Aunty!"

"Well, I never heard the likes of it in all my born days! So it was YOU, you little rapscallions, that's been making all this trouble, and turned everybody's wits clean inside out and scared us all most to death. I've as good a notion as ever I had in my life to take it out o' you this very minute. To think, here I've been, night after night, a—YOU just get well once, you young scamp, and I lay I'll tan the Old Harry out o' both o' ye!"

But Tom, he WAS so proud and joyful, he just COULDN'T hold in, and his tongue just WENT it—she a-chipping in, and spitting fire all along, and both of them going it at once, like a cat convention; and she says:

"WELL, you get all the enjoyment you can out of it NOW, for mind I tell you if I catch you meddling with him again—"

"Meddling with WHO?" Tom says, dropping his smile and looking surprised.

"With WHO? Why, the runaway nigger, of course. Who'd you reckon?"

Tom looks at me very grave, and says:

"Tom, didn't you just tell me he was all right? Hasn't he got away?"

"HIM?" says Aunt Sally; "the runaway nigger? 'Deed he hasn't. They've got him back, safe and sound, and he's in that cabin again, on bread and water, and loaded down with chains, till he's claimed or sold!"

Tom rose square up in bed, with his eye hot, and his nostrils opening and shutting like gills, and sings out to me:

"They hain't no RIGHT to shut him up! SHOVE!—and don't you lose a minute. Turn him loose! he ain't no slave; he's as free as any cretur that walks this earth!"

"What DOES the child mean?"

"I mean every word I SAY, Aunt Sally, and if somebody don't go, I'LL go. I've knowed him all his life, and so has Tom, there. Old Miss Watson died two months ago, and she was ashamed she ever was going to sell him down the river, and SAID so; and she set him free in her will."

"Then what on earth did YOU want to set him free for, seeing he was already free?"

"Well, that IS a question, I must say; and just like women! Why, I wanted the ADVENTURE of it; and I'd a waded neck-deep in blood to—goodness alive, AUNT POLLY!"

If she warn't standing right there, just inside the door, looking as sweet and contented as an angel half full of pie, I wish I may never!

Aunt Sally jumped for her, and most hugged the head off of her, and cried over her, and I found a good enough place for me under the bed, for it was getting pretty sultry for us, seemed to me. And I peeped out, and in a little while Tom's Aunt Polly shook herself loose and stood there looking across at Tom over her spectacles—kind of grinding him into the earth, you know. And then she says:

"Yes, you BETTER turn y'r head away—I would if I was you, Tom."

"Oh, deary me!" says Aunt Sally; "IS he changed so? Why, that ain't TOM, it's Sid; Tom's—Tom's—why, where is Tom? He was here a minute ago."

"You mean where's Huck FINN—that's what you mean! I reckon I hain't raised such a scamp as my Tom all these years not to know him when I SEE him. That WOULD be a pretty howdy-do. Come out from under that bed, Huck Finn."

So I done it. But not feeling brash.

Aunt Sally she was one of the mixed-upest-looking persons I ever see —except one, and that was Uncle Silas, when he come in and they told it all to him. It kind of made him drunk, as you may say, and he didn't know nothing at all the rest of the day, and preached a prayer-meeting sermon that night that gave him a rattling ruputation, because the oldest man in the world couldn't a understood it. So Tom's Aunt Polly, she told all about who I was, and what; and I had to up and tell how I was in such a tight place that when Mrs. Phelps took me for Tom Sawyer—she chipped in and says, "Oh, go on and call me Aunt Sally, I'm used to it now, and 'tain't no need to change"—that when Aunt Sally took me for Tom Sawyer I had to stand it—there warn't no other way, and I knowed he wouldn't mind, because it would be nuts for him, being a mystery, and he'd make an adventure out of it, and be perfectly satisfied. And so it turned out, and he let on to be Sid, and made things as soft as he could for me.

And his Aunt Polly she said Tom was right about old Miss Watson setting Jim free in her will; and so, sure enough, Tom Sawyer had gone and took all that trouble and bother to set a free nigger free! and I couldn't ever understand before, until that minute and that talk, how he COULD help a body set a nigger free with his bringing-up.

Well, Aunt Polly she said that when Aunt Sally wrote to her that Tom and SID had come all right and safe, she says to herself:

"Look at that, now! I might have expected it, letting him go off that way without anybody to watch him. So now I got to go and trapse all the way down the river, eleven hundred mile, and find out what that creetur's up to THIS time, as long as I couldn't seem to get any answer out of you about it."

"Why, I never heard nothing from you," says Aunt Sally.

"Well, I wonder! Why, I wrote you twice to ask you what you could mean by Sid being here."

"Well, I never got 'em, Sis."

Aunt Polly she turns around slow and severe, and says:

"You, Tom!"

"Well—WHAT?" he says, kind of pettish.

"Don t you what ME, you impudent thing—hand out them letters."

"What letters?"

"THEM letters. I be bound, if I have to take a-holt of you I'll—"

"They're in the trunk. There, now. And they're just the same as they was when I got them out of the office. I hain't looked into them, I hain't touched them. But I knowed they'd make trouble, and I thought if you warn't in no hurry, I'd—"

"Well, you DO need skinning, there ain't no mistake about it. And I wrote another one to tell you I was coming; and I s'pose he—"

"No, it come yesterday; I hain't read it yet, but IT'S all right, I've got that one."

I wanted to offer to bet two dollars she hadn't, but I reckoned maybe it was just as safe to not to. So I never said nothing.

Chapter The Last

THE first time I catched Tom private I asked him what was his idea, time of the evasion?—what it was he'd planned to do if the evasion worked all right and he managed to set a nigger free that was already free before? And he said, what he had planned in his head from the start, if we got Jim out all safe, was for us to run him down the river on the raft, and have adventures plumb to the mouth of the river, and then tell him about his being free, and take him back up home on a steamboat, in style, and pay him for his lost time, and write word ahead and get out all the niggers around, and have them waltz him into town with a torchlight procession and a brass-band, and then he would be a hero, and so would we. But I reckoned it was about as well the way it was.

We had Jim out of the chains in no time, and when Aunt Polly and Uncle Silas and Aunt Sally found out how good he helped the doctor nurse Tom, they made a heap of fuss over him, and fixed him up prime, and give him all he wanted to eat, and a good time, and nothing to do. And we had him up to the sick-room, and had a high talk; and Tom give Jim forty dollars for being prisoner for us so patient, and doing it up so good, and Jim was pleased most to death, and busted out, and says:

"DAH, now, Huck, what I tell you?—what I tell you up dah on Jackson islan'? I TOLE you I got a hairy breas', en what's de sign un it;

en I TOLE you I ben rich wunst, en gwineter to be rich AGIN; en it's come true; en heah she is! DAH, now! doan' talk to ME—signs is SIGNS, mine I tell you; en I knowed jis' 's well 'at I 'uz gwineter be rich agin as I's a-stannin' heah dis minute!"

And then Tom he talked along and talked along, and says, le's all three slide out of here one of these nights and get an outfit, and go for howling adventures amongst the Injuns, over in the Territory, for a couple of weeks or two; and I says, all right, that suits me, but I ain't got no money for to buy the outfit, and I reckon I couldn't get none from home, because it's likely pap's been back before now, and got it all away from Judge Thatcher and drunk it up.

"No, he hain't," Tom says; "it's all there yet—six thousand dollars and more; and your pap hain't ever been back since. Hadn't when I come away, anyhow."

Jim says, kind of solemn:

"He ain't a-comin' back no mo', Huck."

I says:

"Why, Jim?"

"Nemmine why, Huck—but he ain't comin' back no mo."

But I kept at him; so at last he says:

"Doan' you 'member de house dat was float'n down de river, en dey wuz a man in dah, kivered up, en I went in en unkivered him and didn' let you come in? Well, den, you kin git yo' money when you wants it, kase dat wuz him."

Tom's most well now, and got his bullet around his neck on a watch-guard for a watch, and is always seeing what time it is, and so there ain't nothing more to write about, and I am rotten glad of it, because if I'd a knowed what a trouble it was to make a book I wouldn't a tackled it, and ain't a-going to no more. But I reckon I got to light out for the Territory ahead of the rest, because Aunt Sally she's going to adopt me and sivilize me, and I can't stand it. I been there before.

The End